

~JESUS 5 CHRIST (11496)

(Je'sus) [Latinized form of the Greek, *I-e-sous'*, which corresponds to the Hebrew, *Ye-shu'a`* or *Yehoh-shu'a`* and means, Yehowah Is Salvation]

- Pre-human Existence
- Not A Co-Creator
- Wisdom Personified
- The Only-Begotten Son
- Why Called The Word
- God Or A God
- What Did Thomas Mean When Saying, My Lord And My God
- His Birth On Earth
- Time Of Birth, Length Of Ministry
- His Birth In Relation To Herod's Death
- Relationship To John's Ministry
- Evidence For Three-And-A-Half-Year Ministry
- Time Of His Death
- Summary Of Evidence
- No Basis For Winter Date Of Birth
- Early Life
- His Baptism
- His Vital Place In God's Purpose
- The Sacred Secret
- Chief Agent Of Life
- The Full Significance Of His Name
- Hated On Account Of His Name
- Bearing Witness To The Truth
- Tested And Perfected
- Still A Free Moral Agent
- His Works And Personal Qualities
- Balanced View Of Material Things
- Courageous Liberator
- Depth Of Feeling And Warmth
- Wonderful Counselor
- Master Teacher
- Leader And Commander
- Able Provider And Righteous Judge
- Outstanding Prophet
- Superb Example Of Love
- Declared Righteous And Worthy

- The name and title of the Son of God from the time of his anointing while on earth.
- The name Jesus **Greek, *I-e-sous*** corresponds to the **Hebrew** name Jeshua, or, in fuller form, Jehoshua, meaning, **Yehowah Is Salvation**. The name itself was not unusual, many men being so named in that period. For this reason persons often added further identification, saying; Jesus **the Nazarene**.
- When he heard that it was **Jesus the Nazarene**, he started shouting and saying; Son of David, Jesus, have mercy on me! (**Mark 10:47**)
- Men of Israel, hear these words; **Jesus the Nazarene**, a man publicly shown by God to you through powerful works and portents and signs that God did through him in your midst, just as you yourselves know. (**Acts of Apostles 2:22**)
- Christ is from the **Greek *Khri-stos***, the equivalent of the **Hebrew *Ma-shi'ach*, Messiah**, and means, **Anointed One**. Whereas the, expression, **anointed one**, was properly applied to others before **Jesus**, such as **Moses, Aaron, and David**.
- By faith Moses, when grown up, refused to be called the son of the daughter of Pharaoh. (**Hebrews 11:24**)
- Choosing to be ill-treated with the people of God rather than to have the temporary enjoyment of sin. (**Hebrews 11:25**)
- Because he esteemed the reproach of the Christ as riches greater than the treasures of Egypt, for he looked intently toward the payment of the reward. (**Hebrews 11:26**)
- If the priest, the anointed one, sins so as to bring guiltiness upon the people, then he must present for his sin that he has committed a sound young bull to Yehowah as a sin offering. (**Leviticus 4:3**)
- Finally he poured some of the anointing oil upon Aaron's head and anointed him so as to sanctify him. (**Leviticus 8:12**)
- The One doing great acts of salvation for his king and exercising loving-kindness to his anointed one, to David and to his seed for time indefinite. (**2 Samuel 22:51**)

- The position, office, or service to which these were anointed only prefigured the superior position, office, and service of **Jesus** Christ. **Jesus** is therefore preeminently and uniquely the Christ, the Son of the living God.

- In answer Simon Peter said; You are the Christ, the Son of the living God. (**Matthew 16:16**)

See Also CHRIST

See Also MESSIAH

•• Pre-human Existence

- The person who became known as **Jesus** Christ did not begin life here on earth. He himself spoke of his **pre-human heavenly life**.

- Moreover, no man has ascended into heaven but he that descended from heaven, the Son of man. (**John 3:13**)

- Because I have come down from heaven to do, not my will, but the will of him that sent me. (**John 6:38**)

- What, therefore, if you should behold the Son of man ascending to where he was before? (**John 6:62**)

- So he went on to say to them; You are from the realms below. I am from the realms above. You are from this world. I am not from this world. (**John 8:23**)

- **Jesus** said to them; If God were your Father, you would love me, for from God I came forth and am here. Neither have I come of my own initiative at all, but that One sent me forth. (**John 8:42**)

- **Jesus** said to them; Most truly I say to you, before Abraham came into existence, I have been. (**John (8:58)**)

- In the beginning the Word was, and the Word was with God, and the Word was a god. (**John 1:1**)

- This one was in the beginning with God. (**John 1:2**)

- Gives the heavenly name of the one who became **Jesus**, saying; In the beginning the Word, **Greek, Lo'gos** was, and the Word was with

God, and the Word was a god was divine, AT, Mo, or of divine being, Böhmer, Stage both German] This one was in the beginning with God. Since Yehowah is eternal and had no beginning.

- **Before the mountains themselves were born, or you proceeded to bring forth as with labor pains the earth and the productive land, even from time indefinite to time indefinite you are God. (Psalms 90:2)**
- **And they are singing the song of Moses the slave of God and the song of the Lamb, saying; Great and wonderful are your works, Yehowah God, the Almighty. Righteous and true are your ways, King of eternity.**
- **And they are singing the song of Moses the slave of God and the song of the Lamb, saying; Great and wonderful are your works, Yehowah God, the Almighty. Righteous and true are your ways, King of eternity. (Revelation 15:3)**
- **The Words being with God from the beginning must here refer to the beginning of Yehowah's creative works. This is confirmed by other texts identifying Jesus as the firstborn of all creation, the beginning of the creation by God.**
- **He is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of all creation. (Colossians 1:15)**
- **A revelation by Jesus Christ, which God gave him, to show his slaves the things that must shortly take place. And he sent forth his angel and presented it in signs through him to his slave John. (Revelation 1:1)**
- **And to the angel of the congregation in Laodicea write. These are the things that the Amen says, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation by God. (Revelation 3:14)**
- **Thus the Scriptures identify the Word, Jesus in his pre-human existence, as God's first creation, his firstborn Son.**
- **That Yehowah was truly the Father or Life-Giver to this firstborn Son and, hence, that this Son was actually a creature of God is evident from Jesus own statements. He pointed to God as the Source of his life, saying; I live because of the Father. According to the context, this meant that his life resulted from or was caused by his Father, even as**

the gaining of life by dying men would result from their faith in Jesus ransom sacrifice.

- **He that feeds on my flesh and drinks my blood remains in union with me, and I in union with him. (John 6:56)**
- **Just as the living Father sent me forth and I live because of the Father, he also that feeds on me, even that one will live because of me. (John 6:57)**
- **If the estimates of modern-day scientists as to the age of the physical universe are anywhere near correct, **Jesus** existence as a spirit creature began thousands of millions of years prior to the creation of the first human.**
- **And you, O Bethlehem Ephrathah, the one too little to get to be among the thousands of Judah, from you there will come out to me the one who is to become ruler in Israel, whose origin is from early times, from the days of time indefinite. (Micah 5:2)**
- **This firstborn spirit Son was used by his Father in the creation of all other things.**
- **All things came into existence through him, and apart from him not even one thing came into existence. What has come into existence. (John 1:3)**
- **Because by means of him all other things were created in the heavens and upon the earth, the things visible and the things invisible, no matter whether they are thrones or lordships or governments or authorities. All other things have been created through him and for him. (Colossians 1:16)**
- **Also, he is before all other things and by means of him all other things were made to exist. (Colossians 1:17)**
- **This would include the millions of other spirit sons of Yehowah God's heavenly family.**
- **I kept on beholding until there were thrones placed and the Ancient of Days sat down. His clothing was white just like snow, and the hair of his head was like clean wool. His throne was flames of fire, its wheels were a burning fire. (Daniel 7:9)**

- There was a stream of fire flowing and going out from before him. There were a **thousand thousands** that kept ministering to him, and **ten thousand times ten thousand** that kept standing right before him. The Court took its seat, and there were books that were opened. (**Daniel 7:10**)
- And I saw, and I heard a voice of many angels around the throne and the living creatures and the elders, and the number of them was myriads of myriads and thousands of thousands. (**Revelation 5:11**)
- **As well as the physical universe and the creatures originally produced within it. Logically, it was to this firstborn Son that Yehowah said;**
- **And God went on to say; Let us make man in our image, according to our likeness, and let them have in subjection the fish of the sea and the flying creatures of the heavens and the domestic animals and all the earth and every moving animal that is moving upon the earth. (**Genesis 1:26**)**
- **All these other created things were not only created through him but also for him, as God's Firstborn and the heir of all things.**
- **Because by means of him all other things were created in the heavens and upon the earth, the things visible and the things invisible, no matter whether they are thrones or lordships or governments or authorities. All other things have been created through him and for him. (**Colossians 1:16**)**
- **Has at the end of these days spoken to us by means of a Son, whom he appointed heir of all things, and through whom he made the systems of things. (**Hebrews 1:2**)**

·· **Not A Co-Creator**

- **The Sons share in the creative works, however, did not make him a Co-Creator with his Father. The power for creation came from God through his Holy Spirit, or active force.**
- **Now the earth proved to be formless and waste and there was darkness upon the surface of the watery deep, and God's active force was moving to and fro over the surface of the waters. (**Genesis 1:2**)**

- **By the word of Yehowah the heavens themselves were made, and by the spirit of his mouth all their army. (Psalms 33:6)**
- **And since Yehowah is the Source of all life, all animate creation, visible and invisible, owes its life to him.**
- **For with you is the source of life, by light from you we can see light. (Psalms 36:9)**
- **Rather than a Co-Creator, then, the Son was the agent or instrumentality through whom Yehowah, the Creator, worked. Jesus himself credited God with the creation, as do all the Scriptures.**
- **In reply he said; Did you not read that he who created them from the beginning made them male and female. (Matthew 19:4)**
- **And said; For this reason a man will leave his father and his mother and will stick to his wife, and the two will be one flesh? (Matthew 19:5)**
- **So that they are no longer two, but one flesh. Therefore, what God has yoked together let no man put apart. (Matthew 19:6)**

See Also CREATION

· Wisdom Personified

- **What is recorded concerning the Word in the Scriptures fits remarkably the description given at;**
- **Yehowah himself produced me as the beginning of his way, the earliest of his achievements of long ago. (Proverbs 8:22)**
- **From time indefinite I was installed, from the start, from times earlier than the earth. (Proverbs 8:23)**
- **When there were no watery deeps I was brought forth as with labor pains, when there were no springs heavily charged with water. (Proverbs 8:24)**
- **Before the mountains themselves had been settled down, ahead of the hills, I was brought forth as with labor pains. (Proverbs 8:25)**

- **When as yet he had not made the earth and the open spaces and the first part of the dust masses of the productive land. ([Proverbs 8:26](#))**
- **When he prepared the heavens I was there, when he decreed a circle upon the face of the watery deep. ([Proverbs 8:27](#))**
- **When he made firm the cloud masses above, when he caused the fountains of the watery deep to be strong. ([Proverbs 8:28](#))**
- **When he set for the sea his decree that the waters themselves should not pass beyond his order, when he decreed the foundations of the earth. ([Proverbs 8:29](#))**
- **Then I came to be beside him as a master worker, and I came to be the one he was specially fond of day by day, I being glad before him all the time. ([Proverbs 8:30](#))**
- **Being glad at the productive land of his earth, and the things I was fond of were with the sons of men. ([Proverbs 8:31](#))**
- **There wisdom is personified, represented as though able to speak and act.**
- **Does not wisdom keep calling out, and discernment keep giving forth its voice? ([Proverbs 8:1](#))**
- **Many professed Christian writers of the early centuries of the Common Era understood this section to refer symbolically to God's Son in his pre-human state.**
- **In view of the texts already considered, there can be no denying that that Son was produced by Yehowah as the beginning of his way, the earliest of his achievements of long ago, nor that the Son was beside Yehowah as a master worker during earth's creation, as described in these verses of Proverbs.**
- **It is true that in [Hebrew](#), which assigns gender to its nouns, as do many other languages, the word for wisdom is always in the feminine gender.**
- **This would continue to be the case even though wisdom is personified and so would not rule out wisdoms being used figuratively**

to represent God's firstborn Son. The **Greek** word for love in the expression, **God is love**.

- He that does not love has not come to know God, because God is love. (**1 John 4:8**)
- Is also in the feminine gender but that does not make God feminine. Solomon, the principal writer of Proverbs
- The proverbs of Solomon the son of David, the king of Israel. (**Proverbs 1:1**)
- Applied the title *qo-he'leth*, congregator, to himself.
- The words of the congregator, the son of David the king in Jerusalem. (**Ecclesiastes 1:1**)
- And this word is also in the feminine gender.
- Wisdom is manifest only by being expressed in some way. God's own wisdom was expressed in creation
- Yehowah himself in wisdom founded the earth. He solidly fixed the heavens in discernment. (**Proverbs 3:19**)
- By his knowledge the watery deeps themselves were split apart, and the cloudy skies keep dripping down light rain. (**Proverbs 3:20**)
- But **through** his Son.
- There is actually to us one God the Father, out of whom all things are, and we for him, and there is one Lord, **Jesus** Christ, through whom all things are, and we through him. (**1 Corinthians 8:6**)
- So, too, God's wise purpose involving mankind is made manifest through, and summed up in, his Son, **Jesus Christ**. Thus, the apostle could say that **Christ** represents the power of God and the wisdom of God and that Christ Jesus has become to us wisdom from God, also righteousness and sanctification and release by ransom.
- However, to those who are the called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the power of God and the wisdom of God. (**1 Corinthians 1:24**)

- But it is due to him that you are in union with Christ **Jesus**, who has become to us wisdom from God, also righteousness and sanctification and release by ransom. (**1 Corinthians 1:30**)
- But we speak God's wisdom in a sacred secret, the hidden wisdom, which God foreordained before the systems of things for our glory. (**1 Corinthians 2:7**)
- This wisdom not one of the rulers of this system of things came to know, for if they had known it they would not have impaled the glorious Lord. (**1 Corinthians 2:8**)
- Does not wisdom keep calling out, and discernment keep giving forth its voice? (**Proverbs 8:1**)
- Take my discipline and not silver, and knowledge rather than choice gold. (**Proverbs 8:10**)
- Riches and glory are with me, hereditary values and righteousness. (**Proverbs 8:18**)
- My fruitage is better than gold, even than refined gold, and my produce than choice silver. (**Proverbs 8:19**)
- In the path of righteousness I walk, in the middle of the roadways of judgment. (**Proverbs 8:20**)
- To cause those loving me to take possession of substance, and their storehouses I keep filled. (**Proverbs 8:21**)

•• The Only-Begotten Son

- **Jesus** being called **the only-begotten Son**
- So the Word became flesh and resided among us, and we had a view of his glory, a glory such as belongs to an **only-begotten son** from a father, and he was full of undeserved kindness and truth. (**John 1:14**)
- For God loved the world so much that he gave his **only-begotten Son**, in order, that everyone exercising faith in him might not be destroyed but have everlasting life. (**John 3:16**)

- He that exercises faith in him is not to be judged. He that does not exercise faith has been judged already, because he has not exercised faith in the name of **the only-begotten Son of God**. (**John 3:18**)
- By this the love of God was made manifest in our case, because God sent forth his **only-begotten Son** into the world that we might gain life through him. (**1 John 4:9**)
- **Does not mean that the other spirit creatures produced were not God's sons, for they are called sons as well.**
- Then the sons of the true God began to notice the daughters of men, that they were good-looking, and they went taking wives for themselves, namely, all whom they chose. (**Genesis 6:2**)
- The Nephilim proved to be in the earth in those days, and also after that, when the sons of the true God continued to have relations with the daughters of men and they bore sons to them, they were the mighty ones who were of old, the men of fame. (**Genesis 6:4**)
- Now it came to be the day when the sons of the true God entered to take their station before Yehowah, and even Satan proceeded to enter right among them. (**Job 1:6**)
- Afterward it came to be the day when the sons of the true God entered to take their station before Yehowah, and Satan also proceeded to enter right among them to take his station before Yehowah. (**Job 2:1**)
- Where did you happen to be when I founded the earth? Tell me, if you do know understanding. (**Job 38:4**)
- Who set its measurements, in case you know, or who stretched out upon it the measuring line? (**Job 38:5**)
- Into what have its socket pedestals been sunk down, or who laid its cornerstone. (**Job 38:6**)
- When the morning stars joyfully cried out together, and all the sons of God began shouting in applause? (**Job 38:7**)

- However, by virtue of his being the sole **direct** creation of his Father, the firstborn Son was unique, different from all others of God's sons, all of whom were created or begotten by Yehowah **through** that firstborn Son.

- So the Word was Yehowah's **only-begotten Son** in a particular sense, even as Isaac was Abraham's, **only-begotten son**, in a particular sense, his father already having another son but not by his wife Sarah.

- By faith Abraham, when he was tested, as good as offered up Isaac, and the man that had gladly received the promises attempted to offer up his only-begotten son. (**Hebrews 11:17**)

- Later on Hagar bore to Abram a son and Abram called the name of his son whom Hagar bore Ishmael. (**Genesis 16:15**)

·· **Why Called The Word**

- The name, or, perhaps, title, **the Word**.

- In the beginning **the Word** was, and **the Word** was with God, and **the Word** was a god. (**John 1:1**)

- Apparently identifies the function that God's firstborn Son performed after other intelligent creatures were formed. A similar expression is found at;

- And he must speak for you to the people, and it must occur that he will serve as a mouth to you, and you will **serve as God** to him. (**Exodus 4:16**)

- Where Yehowah says to Moses concerning his brother Aaron; And he must speak for you to the people, and it must occur that he will serve as a mouth to you, and you will **serve as God to him**.

- As **spokesman** for God's chief representative on earth, Aaron served as, **a mouth** for Moses. Likewise with **the Word**, or **Logos**, who became **Jesus Christ**.

- Yehowah evidently used his Son to convey information and instructions to others of his family of spirit sons, even as he used that Son to deliver his message to human's on earth. Showing that he was God's Word, or Spokesman, Jesus said to his Jewish listeners.

- **Jesus**, in turn, answered them and said; What I teach is not mine, but belongs to him that sent me. (**John 7:16**)
- If anyone desires to do His will, he will know concerning the teaching whether it is from God or I speak of my own originality. (**John 7:17**)
- Also, I know that his commandment means everlasting life. Therefore the things I speak, just as the Father has told me them, so I speak them. (**John 12:50**)
- Therefore Pilate said to him; Well, then, are you a king? **Jesus** answered; You yourself are saying that I am a king. For this I have been born, and for this I have come into the world, that I should bear witness to the truth. Everyone that is on the side of the truth listens to my voice. (**John 18:37**)
- Doubtless on many occasions during his pre-human existence as the Word, **Jesus** acted as **Yehowah's Spokesman** to persons on earth. While certain texts refer to Yehowah as though directly speaking to human's, other texts make clear that he did so through an angelic representative.
- Then Yehowah's angel appeared to him in a flame of fire in the midst of a thorn bush. As he kept looking, why, here the thorn bush was burning with the fire and yet the thorn bush was not consumed. (**Exodus 3:2**)
- At this Moses said; Let me just turn aside that I may inspect this great phenomenon, as to why the thorn bush is not burnt up. (**Exodus 3:3**)
- When Yehowah saw that he turned aside to inspect, God at once called to him out of the midst of the thorn bush and said; Moses! Moses! To which he said; Here I am. (**Exodus 3:4**)
- And when forty years were fulfilled, there appeared to him in the wilderness of Mount Sinai an angel in the fiery flame of a thornbush. (**Acts of Apostles 7:30**)
- This Moses, whom they disowned, saying; Who appointed you ruler and judge? This man God sent off as both ruler and deliverer by the hand of the angel that appeared to him in the thornbush. (**Acts of Apostles 7:35**)

- **Later Yehowah's angel found her at a fountain of waters in the wilderness, at the fountain on the way to Shur. (Genesis 16:7)**
- **And he began to say; Hagar, maidservant of Sarai, just where have you come from and where are you going? To this she said; Why, from Sarai my mistress I am running away. (Genesis 16:8)**
- **And Yehowah's angel went on to say to her; Return to your mistress and humble yourself under her hand. (Genesis 16:9)**
- **Then Yehowah's angel said to her; I shall greatly multiply your seed, so that it will not be numbered for multitude. (Genesis 16:10)**
- **Further Yehowah's angel added to her; Here you are pregnant, and you shall give birth to a son and must call his name Ishmael, for Yehowah has heard your affliction. (Genesis 16:11)**
- **Then she began to call the name of Yehowah, who was speaking to her; You are a God of sight, for she said; Have I here actually looked upon him who sees me? (Genesis 16:13)**
- **Now after these things it came about that the true God put Abraham to the test. Accordingly he said to him; Abraham! To which he said; Here I am! (Genesis 22:1)**
- **But Yehowah's angel began calling to him out of the heavens and saying; Abraham, Abraham! To which he answered; Here I am! (Genesis 22:11)**
- **And he went on to say; Do not put out your hand against the boy and do not do anything at all to him, for now I do know that you are God-fearing in that you have not withheld your son, your only one, from me. (Genesis 22:12)**
- **And Yehowah's angel proceeded to call to Abraham the second time out of the heavens (Genesis 22:15)**
- **And to say; By myself I do swear, is the utterance of Yehowah, that by reason of the fact that you have done this thing and you have not withheld your son, your only one. (Genesis 22:16)**
- **I shall surely bless you and I shall surely multiply your seed like**

- the stars of the heavens and like the grains of sand that are on the seashore, and your seed will take possession of the gate of his enemies. ([Genesis 22:17](#))
- And by means of your seed all nations of the earth will certainly bless themselves due to the fact that you have listened to my voice. ([Genesis 22:18](#))
 - Reasonably, in the majority of such cases God spoke through the **Word**. He likely did so in Eden, for on two of the three occasions where mention is made of God's speaking there, the record specifically shows someone was with Him, undoubtedly his Son.
 - And God went on to say; Let us make man in our image, according to our likeness, and let them have in subjection the fish of the sea and the flying creatures of the heavens and the domestic animals and all the earth and every moving animal that is moving upon the earth. ([Genesis 1:26](#))
 - And God proceeded to create the man in his image, in God's image he created him, male and female he created them. ([Genesis 1:27](#))
 - Further, God blessed them and God said to them; Be fruitful and become many and fill the earth and subdue it, and have in subjection the fish of the sea and the flying creatures of the heavens and every living creature that is moving upon the earth. ([Genesis 1:28](#))
 - And God went on to say; Here I have given to you all vegetation bearing seed which is on the surface of the whole earth and every tree on which there is the fruit of a tree bearing seed. To you let it serve as food. ([Genesis 1:29](#))
 - And to every wild beast of the earth and to every flying creature of the heavens and to everything moving upon the earth in which there is life as a soul I have given all green vegetation for food. And it came to be so. ([Genesis 1:30](#))
 - And Yehowah God also laid this command upon the man; From every tree of the garden you may eat to satisfaction. ([Genesis 2:16](#))
 - But as for the tree of the knowledge of good and bad you must

- not eat from it, for in the day you eat from it you will positively die. (**Genesis 2:17**)
- Later they heard the voice of Yehowah God walking in the garden about the breezy part of the day, and the man and his wife went into hiding from the face of Yehowah God in between the trees of the garden. (**Genesis 3:8**)
 - And Yehowah God kept calling to the man and saying to him; Where are you? (**Genesis 3:9**)
 - Finally he said; Your voice I heard in the garden, but I was afraid because I was naked and so I hid myself. (**Genesis 3:10**)
 - At that he said; Who told you that you were naked? From the tree from which I commanded you not to eat have you eaten? (**Genesis 3:11**)
 - And the man went on to say; The woman whom you gave to be with me, she gave me fruit from the tree and so I ate. (**Genesis 3:12**)
 - With that Yehowah God said to the woman; What is this you have done? To this the woman replied; The serpent, it deceived me and so I ate. (**Genesis 3:13**)
 - And Yehowah God proceeded to say to the serpent; Because you have done this thing, you are the cursed one out of all the domestic animals and out of all the wild beasts of the field. Upon your belly you will go and dust is what you will eat all the days of your life. (**Genesis 3:14**)
 - And I shall put enmity between you and the woman and between your seed and her seed. He will bruise you in the head and you will bruise him in the heel. (**Genesis 3:15**)
 - To the woman he said; I shall greatly increase the pain of your pregnancy, in birth pangs you will bring forth children, and your craving will be for your husband, and he will dominate you. (**Genesis 3:16**)
 - And to Adam he said; Because you listened to your wife's voice and took to eating from the tree concerning which I gave you this command; You must not eat from it, cursed is the ground on

- your account. In pain you will eat its produce all the days of your life. (Genesis 3:17)**
- **And thorns and thistles it will grow for you, and you must eat the vegetation of the field. (Genesis 3:18)**
 - **In the sweat of your face you will eat bread until you return to the ground, for out of it you were taken. For dust you are and to dust you will return. (Genesis 3:19)**
 - **And Yehowah God went on to say; Here the man has become like one of us in knowing good and bad, and now in order, that he may not put his hand out and actually take fruit also from the tree of life and eat and live to time indefinite. (Genesis 3:22)**
 - **The angel who guided Israel through the wilderness and whose voice the Israelites were strictly to obey because Yehowah's name was within him, may therefore have been God's Son, the Word.**
 - **Here I am sending an angel ahead of you to keep you on the road and to bring you into the place that I have prepared. (Exodus 23:20)**
 - **Watch yourself because of him and obey his voice. Do not behave rebelliously against him, for he will not pardon your transgression, because my name is within him. (Exodus 23:21)**
 - **However, if you strictly obey his voice and really do all that I shall speak, then I shall certainly be hostile to your enemies and harass those who harass you. (Exodus 23:22)**
 - **For my angel will go ahead of you and will indeed bring you to the Amorites and the Hittites and the Perizzites and the Canaanites, the Hivites and the Jebusites, and I shall certainly efface them. (Exodus 23:23)**
 - **And it came about when Joshua happened to be by Jericho that he proceeded to raise his eyes and look, and there, there was a man standing in front of him with his drawn sword in his hand. So Joshua walked up to him and said to him; Are you for us or for our adversaries? (Joshua 5:13)**
 - **To this he said; No, but I, as prince of the army of Yehowah I have now come. With that Joshua fell on his face to the earth**

- and prostrated himself and said to him; What is my lord saying to his servant? ([Joshua 5:14](#))
- In turn the prince of the army of Yehowah said to Joshua; Draw your sandals from off your feet, because the place on which you are standing is holy. At once Joshua did so. ([Joshua 5:15](#))
 - This does not mean that the Word is the only angelic representative through whom Yehowah has spoken. The inspired statements at;
 - You who received the Law as transmitted by angels but have not kept it. ([Acts of Apostles 7:53](#))
 - Why, then, the Law? It was added to make transgressions manifest, until the seed should arrive to whom the promise had been made, and it was transmitted through angels by the hand of a mediator. ([Galatians 3:19](#))
 - For if the word spoken through angels proved to be firm, and every transgression and disobedient act received a retribution in harmony with justice. ([Hebrews 2:2](#))
 - How shall we escape if we have neglected a salvation of such greatness in that it began to be spoken through our Lord and was verified for us by those who heard him. ([Hebrews 2:3](#))
 - Make clear that the Law covenant was transmitted to Moses by angelic sons of God other than his Firstborn.
 - **Jesus** continues to bear the name; **The Word of God**, since his return to heavenly glory.
 - And he is arrayed with an outer garment sprinkled with blood, and the name he is called is **The Word of God**. ([Revelation 19:13](#))
 - And upon his outer garment, even upon his thigh, he has a name written, King of kings and Lord of lords. ([Revelation 19:16](#))

.. God Or A God

- Some translations render,
- In the beginning the Word was, and the Word was with God, and

the Word was **a god**. (John 1:1)

- As saying; In the beginning was the **Word**, and the **Word** was **with God**, and the **Word was God**. Literally the **Greek** text reads; In beginning was the word, and the word was toward the god, and god was the word.
- The translator must supply capitals as needed in the language into which he translates the text. It is clearly proper to capitalize **God** in translating the phrase the god, since this must identify the Almighty God **with whom** the **Word** was.
- But the capitalizing of the word **god** in the second case does not have the same justification.
- The **New World Translation** renders this text. In the beginning the **Word** was, and the **Word** was **with God**, and the **Word** was **a god**. True, there is no indefinite article, corresponding to a or an in the original Greek text.
- But this does not mean one should not be used in translation, for Koine, or common Greek, **had no indefinite article**. Hence, throughout the **Christian Greek Scriptures**, translators are obliged to use the indefinite article or not according to their understanding of the meaning of the text.
- All English translations of those Scriptures do contain the indefinite article hundreds of times, yet most do not use it at;
- In the beginning the Word was, and the Word was with God, and the Word was **a god**. (John 1:1)
- Nevertheless, its use in the rendering of this text has sound basis.
- First, it should be noted that the text itself shows that the Word was **with God**, hence could not be God, that is, be the Almighty God.
- This one was in the beginning with God. (John 1:2)
- Which would be unnecessary if;
- In the beginning the Word was, and the Word was with God, and the Word was a god. (John 1:1)

- Actually showed the Word to be God. Additionally, the word for god **Greek, *the-os'*** in its second occurrence in the verse is significantly without the definite article **the, Greek, *ho***.
- Regarding this fact, Ernst Haenchen, in a commentary on the Gospel of **(John Chapters 1-6)**, stated, ***the-os'*** and ***ho the-os'*** god, divine and the God were not the same thing in this period. In fact, for the Evangelist, only the Father was God ***ho the-os'***.
- This means everlasting life, their taking in knowledge of you, the **only true God, and of the one whom you sent forth, Jesus Christ.** **(John 17:3)**
- The **Son** was subordinate to him,
- You heard that I said to you, I am going away and I am coming back to you. If you loved me, you would rejoice that I am going my way to the Father, because the **Father is greater than I am.** **(John 14:28)**
- But that is only hinted at in this passage because here the emphasis is on the proximity of the one to the other. It was quite possible in Jewish and Christian monotheism to speak of divine beings that existed alongside and under God, but were not identical with him.
- Who, although he was existing in God's form, gave no consideration to a seizure, namely, that he should be equal to God. **(Philippians 2:6)**
- No, but he emptied himself and took a slaves form and came to be in the likeness of men. **(Philippians 2:7)**
- More than that, when he found himself in fashion as a man, he humbled himself and became obedient as far as death, yes, death on a torture stake. **(Philippians 2:8)**
- For this very reason also God exalted him to a superior position and kindly gave him the name that is above every other name. **(Philippians 2:9)**
- So that in the name of **Jesus** every knee should bend of those in heaven and those on earth and those under the ground. **(Philippians 2:10)**

- **Proves that. In that passage Paul depicts just such a divine being, who later became man in Jesus Christ. Thus, in both Philippians;**
- **In the beginning the Word was, and the Word was with God, and the Word was a god. (John 1:1)**
- **It is not a matter of a dialectical relationship between two-in-one, but of a personal union of two entities. [John 1, translated by R. W. Funk, 1984, pp. 109,110]**
- **After giving as a translation of;**
- **In the beginning the Word was, and the Word was with God, and the Word was a god. (John 1:1)**
- **And divine, of the category divinity, was the Word, Haenchen goes on to state; In this instance, the verb was *en* simply expresses predication. And the predicate noun must accordingly be more carefully observed: *the-os'* is not the same thing as *ho the-os'*, divine is not the same thing as God. [pp. 110,111]**
- **Elaborating on this point, Philip B. Harner brought out that the grammatical construction in;**
- **In the beginning the Word was, and the Word was with God, and the Word was a god. (John 1:1)**
- **Involves an anarthrous predicate, that is, a predicate noun without the definite article the, preceding the verb, which construction is primarily qualitative in meaning and indicates that the *logos* has the nature of *theos*. He further stated;**
- **In the beginning the Word was, and the Word was with God, and the Word was a god. (John 1:1)**
- **I think that the qualitative force of the predicate is so prominent that the noun *the-os'* cannot be regarded as definite. [Journal of Biblical Literature, 1973, pp. 85,87]**
- **Other translators, also recognizing that the Greek term has qualitative force and describes the nature of the Word, therefore render the phrase: the Word was divine. [AT, Sd, compare Mo, see NW appendix, p. 1579]**

- **The Hebrew Scriptures are consistently clear in showing that there is but one Almighty God, the Creator of all things and the Most High, whose name is Yehowah.**
- **When Abram got to be ninety-nine years old, then Yehowah appeared to Abram and said to him; I am God Almighty. Walk before me and prove yourself faultless. ([Genesis 17:1](#))**
- **For this is what Yehowah has said, the Creator of the heavens, He the true God, the Former of the earth and the Maker of it, He the One who firmly established it, who did not create it simply for nothing, who formed it even to be inhabited; I am Yehowah, and there is no one else. ([Isaiah 45:18](#))**
- **That people may know that you, whose name is Yehowah, you alone are the Most High over all the earth. ([Psalms 83:18](#))**
- **For that reason Moses could say to the nation of Israel; Yehowah our God is one Yehowah. And you must love Yehowah your God with all your heart and all your soul and all your vital force.**
- **Listen, O Israel, Yehowah our God is one Yehowah. ([Deuteronomy 6:4](#))**
- **And you must love Yehowah your God with all your heart and all your soul and all your vital force. ([Deuteronomy 6:5](#))**
- **The [Christian Greek Scriptures](#) do not contradict this teaching that had been accepted and believed by God's servants for thousands of years, but instead they support it.**
- **Jesus answered; The first is, Hear, O Israel, Yehowah our God is one Yehowah. ([Mark 12:29](#))**
- **Or is he the God of the Jews only? Is he not also of people of the nations? Yes, of people of the nations also. ([Romans 3:29](#))**
- **If truly God is one, who will declare circumcised people righteous as a result of faith and uncircumcised people righteous by means of their faith. ([Romans 3:30](#))**
- **There is actually to us one God the Father, out of whom all things are, and we for him, and there is one Lord, [Jesus](#) Christ, through**

- whom all things are, and we through him. (**1 Corinthians 8:6**)
- One body there is, and one spirit, even as you were called in the one hope to which you were called. (**Ephesians 4:4**)
 - One Lord, one faith, one baptism. (**Ephesians 4:5**)
 - One God and Father of all persons, who is over all and through all and in all. (**Ephesians 4:6**)
 - For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, a man, Christ **Jesus**. (**1 Timothy 2:5**)
 - **Jesus** Christ himself said; The Father is greater than I am, and referred to the Father as his God, the only true God.
 - You heard that I said to you, I am going away and I am coming back to you. If you loved me, you would rejoice that I am going my way to the Father, because the **Father is greater than I am**. (**John 14:28**)
 - This means everlasting life, their taking in knowledge of you, **the only true God**, and of the one whom you sent forth, **Jesus** Christ. (**John 17:3**)
 - **Jesus** said to her; Stop clinging to me. For I have not yet ascended to the Father. But be on your way to my brothers and say to them, I am ascending **to my Father and your Father and to my God and your God**. (**John 20:17**)
 - And at the ninth hour **Jesus** called out with a loud voice; *Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani?* Which means, when translated, **My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?** (**Mark 15:34**)
 - A revelation by **Jesus** Christ, which God gave him, to show his slaves the things that must shortly take place. And he sent forth his angel and presented it in signs through him to his slave John. (**Revelation 1:1**)
 - The one that conquers, I will make him a pillar in the temple of my God, and he will by no means go out from it anymore, and I will write upon him the name of my God and the name of the city of my God, the new Jerusalem which descends out of heaven from my God, and that new name of mine. (**Revelation 3:12**)

- On numerous occasions **Jesus** expressed his inferiority and subordination to his Father.
- And he said to him; All these things I will give you if you fall down and do an act of worship to me. (**Matthew 4:9**)
- Then **Jesus** said to him; Go away, Satan! For it is written: It is Yehowah your God you must worship, and it is to him alone you must render sacred service. (**Matthew 4:10**)
- He said to them; You will indeed drink my cup, but this sitting down at my right hand and at my left is not mine to give, but it belongs to those for whom it has been prepared by my Father. (**Matthew 20:23**)
- And he himself drew away from them about a stone's throw, and bent his knees and began to pray. (**Luke 22:41**)
- Saying; Father, if you wish, remove this cup from me. Nevertheless, let, not my will, but yours take place. (**Luke 22:42**)
- Therefore, in answer, **Jesus** went on to say to them; Most truly I say to you, The Son cannot do a single thing of his own initiative, but only what he beholds the Father doing. For whatever things that One does, these things the Son also does in like manner. (**John 5:19**)
- **Jesus** said to them; If God were your Father, you would love me, for from God I came forth and am here. Neither have I come of my own initiative at all, but that One sent me forth. (**John 8:42**)
- Most truly I say to you, a slave is not greater than his master, nor is one that is sent forth greater than the one that sent him. (**John 13:16**)
- Even after **Jesus** ascension into heaven his apostles continued to present the same picture.
- But I want you to know that the head of every man is the Christ, in turn the head of a woman is the man, in turn the head of the Christ is God. (**1 Corinthians 11:3**)
- However, now Christ has been raised up from the dead, the

- firstfruits of those who have fallen asleep in death. (**1 Corinthians 15:20**)
- Next, the end, when he hands over the kingdom to his God and Father, when he has brought to nothing all government and all authority and power. (**1 Corinthians 15:24**)
 - For he must rule as king until God has put all enemies under his feet (**1 Corinthians 15:25**)
 - As the last enemy, death is to be brought to nothing. (**1 Corinthians 15:26**)
 - For God subjected all things under his feet. But when he says that all things have been subjected, it is evident that it is with the exception of the one who subjected all things to him. (**1 Corinthians 15:27**)
 - But when all things will have been subjected to him, then the Son himself will also subject himself to the One who subjected all things to him, that God may be all things to everyone. (**1 Corinthians 15:28**)
 - Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord **Jesus** Christ, for according to his great mercy he gave us a new birth to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead. (**1 Peter 1:3**)
 - My little children, I am writing you these things that you may not commit a sin. And yet, if anyone does commit a sin, we have a helper with the Father, **Jesus** Christ, a righteous one. (**1 John 2:1**)
 - By this the love of God was made manifest in our case, because God sent forth his only-begotten Son into the world that we might gain life through him. (**1 John 4:9**)
 - The love is in this respect, not that we have loved God, but that he loved us and sent forth his Son as a propitiatory sacrifice for our sins. (**1 John 4:10**)
 - These facts give solid support to a translation such as **the Word was a god at**;

- In the beginning the Word was, and the Word was with God, and **the Word was a god.** (**John 1:1**)
- The Words preeminent position among God's creatures as the Firstborn, the one through whom God created all things, and as God's Spokesman, gives real basis for his being called, **a god**, or mighty one.
- The Messianic prophecy at,
- For there has been a child born to us, there has been a son given to us, and the princely rule will come to be upon his shoulder. And his name will be called Wonderful Counselor, **Mighty God**, Eternal Father, Prince of Peace. (**Isaiah 9:6**)
- Foretold that he would be called, **Mighty God**, though **not the Almighty God**, and that he would be the Eternal Father of all those privileged to live as his subjects. The zeal of his own Father, Yehowah of armies, would accomplish this.
- For there has been a child born to us, there has been a son given to us, and the princely rule will come to be upon his shoulder. And his name will be called Wonderful Counselor, **Mighty God**, Eternal Father, Prince of Peace. (**Isaiah 9:6**)
- Certainly if God's Adversary, Satan the Devil, is called a god.
- Among whom the god of this system of things has blinded the minds of the unbelievers, that the illumination of the glorious Good News about the Christ, who is the image of God, might not shine through. (**2 Corinthians 4:4**)
- Because of his dominance over men and demons
- We know we originate with God, but the whole world is lying in the power of the wicked one. (**1 John 5:19**)
- Later he was expelling a dumb demon. After the demon came out, the dumb man spoke. And the crowds marveled. (**Luke 11:14**)
- But certain ones of them said; He expels the demons by means of Beelzebub the ruler of the demons. (**Luke 11:15**)
- However, others, to tempt him, began seeking a sign out of

heaven from him. ([Luke 11:16](#))

- Knowing their imaginations he said to them; Every kingdom divided against itself comes to desolation, and a house divided against itself falls. ([Luke 11:17](#))
- So if Satan is also divided against himself, how will his kingdom stand? Because you say I expel the demons by means of Beelzebub. ([Luke 11:18](#))
- Then with far greater reason and propriety is God's firstborn Son called, a god, the only-begotten god, as the most reliable manuscripts of;
- No man has seen God at any time, the only-begotten god who is in the bosom position with the Father is the one that has explained him. ([John 1:18](#))
- When charged by opposers with making himself a god, **Jesus** reply was; Is it not written in your Law, I said; You are gods? If he called gods those against whom the word of God came, and yet the Scripture cannot be nullified, do you say to me whom the Father sanctified and dispatched into the world; You blaspheme! Because I said; I am God's Son?
- Once more the Jews lifted up stones to stone him. ([John 10:31](#))
- Jesus replied to them; I displayed to you many fine works from the Father. For which of those works are you stoning me? ([John 10:32](#))
- The Jews answered him; We are stoning you, not for a fine work, but for blasphemy, even because you, although being a man, make yourself a god. ([John 10:33](#))
- Jesus answered them; Is it not written in your Law; I said, you are gods? ([John 10:34](#))
- Jesus there quoted from ([Psalms Chapter 82](#)), in which human judges, whom God condemned for not executing justice, were called gods.
- God is stationing himself in the assembly of the Divine One, in the middle of the gods he judges. ([Psalms 82:1](#))

- How long will you keep on judging with injustice and showing partiality to the wicked themselves? (**Psalm 82:2**)
- I myself have said; You are gods, and all of you are sons of the Most High. (**Psalm 82:6**)
- Surely you will die just as men do, and like any one of the princes you will fall! (**Psalm 82:7**)
- Thus, **Jesus** showed the unreasonableness of charging him with blasphemy for stating that he was, not God, but God's Son.
- This charge of blasphemy arose as a result of **Jesus** having said;
- I and the Father are one. (**John 10:30**)
- That this did not mean that **Jesus** claimed to be the Father or to be God is evident from his reply, already partly considered. The oneness to which Jesus referred must be understood in harmony with the context of his statement.
- He was speaking of his works and his care of the sheep who would follow him. His works, as well as his words, demonstrated that there was unity, not disunity and disharmony, between him and his Father, a point his reply went on to emphasize.
- **Jesus** answered them; I told you, and yet you do not believe. The works that I am doing in the name of my Father, these bear witness about me. (**John 10:25**)
- But you do not believe, because you are none of my sheep. (**John 10:26**)
- If I am not doing the works of my Father, do not believe me. (**John 10:37**)
- But if I am doing them, even though you do not believe me, believe the works, in order, that you may come to know and may continue knowing that the Father is in union with me and I am in union with the Father. (**John 10:38**)
- **Jesus** said to them; My food is for me to do the will of him that sent me and to finish his work. (**John 4:34**)

- **I cannot do a single thing of my own initiative, just as I hear, I judge, and the judgment that I render is righteous, because I seek, not my own will, but the will of him that sent me. (John 5:30)**
- **Because I have come down from heaven to do, not my will, but the will of him that sent me. (John 6:38)**
- **This is the will of him that sent me, that I should lose nothing out of all that he has given me but that I should resurrect it at the last day. (John 6:39)**
- **For this is the will of my Father, that everyone that beholds the Son and exercises faith in him should have everlasting life, and I will resurrect him at the last day. (John 6:40)**
- **And yet if I do judge, my judgment is truthful, because I am not alone, but the Father who sent me is with me. (John 8:16)**
- **Also, in your own Law it is written: The witness of two men is true. (John 8:17)**
- **I am one that bears witness about myself, and the Father who sent me bears witness about me. (John 8:18)**
- **As regards his sheep, he and his Father were likewise at unity in their protecting such sheeplike ones and leading them to everlasting life.**
- **My sheep listen to my voice, and I know them, and they follow me. (John 10:27)**
- **And I give them everlasting life, and they will by no means ever be destroyed, and no one will snatch them out of my hand. (John 10:28)**
- **What my Father has given me is something greater than all other things, and no one can snatch them out of the hand of the Father. (John 10:29)**
- **And I will raise up over them one shepherd, and he must feed them, even my servant David. He himself will feed them, and he himself will become their shepherd. (Ezekiel 34:23)**

- **And I myself, Yehowah, will become their God, and my servant David a chieftain in the midst of them. I myself, Yehowah, have spoken. (Ezekiel 34:24)**
- **Jesus** prayer on behalf of the unity of all his disciples, including future ones, shows that the oneness, or union, between Jesus and his Father was not as to identity of person but as to purpose and action. In this way Jesus disciples could all be one, just as he and his Father are one.
- I make request, not concerning these only, but also concerning those putting faith in me through their word. (John 17:20)
- In order, that they may all be one, just as you, Father, are in union with me and I am in union with you, that they also may be in union with us, in order, that the world may believe that you sent me forth. (John 17:21)
- Also, I have given them the glory that you have given me, in order, that they may be one just as we are one. (John 17:22)
- I in union with them and you in union with me, in order, that they may be perfected into one, that the world may have the knowledge that you sent me forth and that you loved them just as you loved me. (John 17:23)
- In harmony with this, **Jesus**, responding to a question by Thomas, said; If you men had known me, you would have known my Father also, from this moment on you know him and have seen him, and, in answer to a question from Philip, Jesus added; He that has seen me has seen the Father also.
- Thomas said to him; Lord, we do not know where you are going. How do we know the way? (John 14:5)
- **Jesus** said to him; I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me. (John 14:6)
- If you men had known me, you would have known my Father also, from this moment on you know him and have seen him. (John 14:7)
- Philip said to him; Lord, show us the Father, and it is enough for

us. ([John 14:8](#))

- **Jesus** said to him; Have I been with you men so long a time, and yet, Philip, you have not come to know me? He that has seen me has seen the Father also. How is it you say; Show us the Father? ([John 14:9](#))
- Again, **Jesus** following explanation shows that this was so because he faithfully represented his Father, spoke the Fathers words, and did the Fathers works.
- Do you not believe that I am in union with the Father and the Father is in union with me? The things I say to you men I do not speak of my own originality, but the Father who remains in union with me is doing his works. ([John 14:10](#))
- Believe me that I am in union with the Father and the Father is in union with me, otherwise, believe on account of the works themselves. ([John 14:11](#))
- Father, glorify your name. Therefore a voice came out of heaven: I both glorified it and will glorify it again. ([John 12:28](#))
- However, Jesus cried out and said; He that puts faith in me puts faith, not in me only, but in him also that sent me. ([John 12:44](#))
- And he that beholds me beholds also him that sent me. ([John 12:45](#))
- I have come as a light into the world, in order, that everyone putting faith in me may not remain in the darkness. ([John 12:46](#))
- But if anyone hears my sayings and does not keep them, I do not judge him, for I came, not to judge the world, but to save the world. ([John 12:47](#))
- He that disregards me and does not receive my sayings has one to judge him. The word that I have spoken is what will judge him in the last day. ([John 12:48](#))
- because I have not spoken out of my own impulse, but the Father himself who sent me has given me a commandment as to what to tell and what to speak. ([John 12:49](#))

- **It was on this same occasion, the night of his death, that Jesus said to these very disciples; The Father is greater than I am.**
- **You heard that I said to you, I am going away and I am coming back to you. If you loved me, you would rejoice that I am going my way to the Father, because the Father is greater than I am. (John 14:28)**
- **The disciples seeing the Father in Jesus can also be understood in the light of other Scriptural examples. Jacob, for instance, said to Esau:**
 - **Then Esau said; I have a great many, my brother. Let continue yours what is yours. (Genesis 33:9)**
 - **However, Jacob said; No, please. If, now, I have found favor in your eyes, then you must take my gift at my hand, because in harmony with its purpose I have seen your face as though seeing God's face in that you received me with pleasure. (Genesis 33:10)**
 - **Take, please, the gift conveying my blessing which was brought to you, because God has favored me and because I have everything. And he continued to urge him, so that he took it. (Genesis 33:11)**
 - **After that Jacob said; O God of my father Abraham and God of my father Isaac, O Yehowah, you who are saying to me, Return to your land and to your relatives and I will deal well with you. (Genesis 32:9)**
 - **I am unworthy of all the loving kindnesses and of all the faithfulness that you have exercised toward your servant, for with but my staff I crossed this Jordan and now I have become two camps. (Genesis 32:10)**
 - **Deliver me, I pray you, from my brothers hand, from Esau's hand, because I am afraid of him that he may come and certainly assault me, mother together with children. (Genesis 32:11)**
 - **And you, you have said; Unquestionably I shall deal well with you and I will constitute your seed like the grains of sand of the sea, which cannot be numbered for multitude. (Genesis 32:12)**

- **After God's interrogation of Job out of a windstorm had clarified that man's understanding, Job said; In hearsay I have heard about you, but now my own eye does see you.**
- **And Yehowah proceeded to answer Job out of the windstorm and say; (Job 38:1)**
- **In hearsay I have heard about you, but now my own eye does see you. (Job 42:5)**
- **And Yehowah's angel did not repeat appearing to Manoah and his wife anymore. Then it was that Manoah knew that he had been Yehowah's angel. (Judges 13:21)**
- **Consequently Manoah said to his wife; We shall positively die, because it is God that we have seen. (Judges 13:22)**
- **The eyes of his heart had been enlightened.**
- **The eyes of your heart having been enlightened, that you may know what is the hope to which he called you, what the glorious riches are which he holds as an inheritance for the holy ones. (Ephesians 1:18)**
- **That Jesus statement about seeing the Father was meant to be understood figuratively and not literally is evident from his own statement at;**
- **It is written in the Prophets: And they will all be taught by Yehowah. Everyone that has heard from the Father and has learned comes to me. (John 6:45)**
- **As well as from the fact that John, long after Jesus death, wrote; No man has seen God at any time, the only-begotten god who is in the bosom position with the Father is the one that has explained him.**
- **No man has seen God at any time, the only-begotten god who is in the bosom position with the Father is the one that has explained him. (John 1:18)**
- **At no time has anyone beheld God. If we continue loving one another, God remains in us and his love is made perfect in us.**
- **Beloved ones, do not believe every inspired expression, but test**

the inspired expressions to see whether they originate with God, because many false prophets have gone forth into the world. (1 John 4:1)

· What Did Thomas Mean When Saying, My Lord And My God

- On the occasion of **Jesus** appearance to Thomas and the other apostles, which had removed Thomas doubts of Jesus resurrection, the now-convinced Thomas exclaimed to Jesus; My Lord and my God! literally; The Lord of me and the God *ho-The-os'* of me!
- But Thomas, one of the twelve, who was called The Twin, was not with them when **Jesus** came. (John 20:24)
- Consequently the other disciples would say to him; We have seen the Lord! But he said to them; Unless I see in his hands the print of the nails and stick my finger into the print of the nails and stick my hand into his side, I will certainly not believe. (John 20:25)
- Well, eight days later his disciples were again indoors, and Thomas with them. **Jesus** came, although the doors were locked, and he stood in their midst and said; May you have peace. (John 20:26)
- Next he said to Thomas; Put your finger here, and see my hands, and take your hand and stick it into my side, and stop being unbelieving but become believing. (John 20:27)
- In answer Thomas said to him; My Lord and my God! (John 20:28)
- **Jesus** said to him; Because you have seen me have you believed? Happy are those who do not see and yet believe. (John 20:29)
- Some scholars have viewed this expression as an exclamation of astonishment spoken to **Jesus** but actually directed to God, his Father. However, others claim the original **Greek** requires that the words be viewed as being directed to Jesus.
- Even if this is so, the expression; My Lord and my God, would still have to harmonize with the rest of the inspired Scriptures. Since the record shows that Jesus had previously sent his disciples the message,

- **Jesus** said to her; Stop clinging to me. For I have not yet ascended to the Father. But be on your way to my brothers and say to them, I am ascending to my Father and your Father and to my God and your God. (**John 20:17**)
- John himself, after recounting Thomas encounter with the resurrected **Jesus**, says of this and similar accounts,
- To be sure, **Jesus** performed many other signs also before the disciples, which are not written down in this scroll. (**John 20:30**)
- But these have been written down that you may believe that **Jesus** is the Christ the Son of God, and that, because of believing, you may have life by means of his name. (**John 20:31**)
- So, Thomas may have addressed **Jesus** as, my God, in the sense of Jesus being a god though not the Almighty God, **not the only true God**, to whom Thomas had often heard Jesus pray.
- **Jesus** spoke these things, and, raising his eyes to heaven, he said; Father, the hour has come, glorify your son, that your son may glorify you. (**John 17:1**)
- According as you have given him authority over all flesh, that, as regards the whole number whom you have given him, he may give them everlasting life. (**John 17:2**)
- This means everlasting life, their taking in knowledge of you, the only true God, and of the one whom you sent forth, **Jesus** Christ. (**John 17:3**)
- Or he may have addressed **Jesus** as my God, in a way similar to expressions made by his forefathers, recorded in the Hebrew Scriptures, with which Thomas was familiar.
- On various occasions when individuals were visited or addressed by an angelic messenger of Yehowah, the individuals, or at times the Bible writer setting out the account, responded to or spoke of that angelic messenger as though he were Yehowah God.
- Later Yehowah's angel found her at a fountain of waters in the wilderness, at the fountain on the way to Shur. (**Genesis 16:7**)

- **And he began to say; Hagar, maidservant of Sarai, just where have you come from and where are you going? To this she said; Why, from Sarai my mistress I am running away. (Genesis 16:8)**
- **And Yehowah's angel went on to say to her; Return to your mistress and humble yourself under her hand. (Genesis 16:9)**
- **Then Yehowah's angel said to her; I shall greatly multiply your seed, so that it will not be numbered for multitude. (Genesis 16:10)**
- **Further Yehowah's angel added to her; Here you are pregnant, and you shall give birth to a son and must call his name Ishmael, for Yehowah has heard your affliction. (Genesis 16:11)**
- **Then she began to call the name of Yehowah, who was speaking to her; You are a God of sight, for she said; Have I here actually looked upon him who sees me? (Genesis 16:13)**
- **Afterward Yehowah appeared to him among the big trees of Mamre, while he was sitting at the entrance of the tent about the heat of the day. (Genesis 18:1)**
- **When he raised his eyes, then he looked and there three men were standing some distance from him. When he caught sight of them he began running to meet them from the entrance of the tent and proceeded to bow down to the earth. (Genesis 18:2)**
- **Then he said; Yehowah, if, now, I have found favor in your eyes, please do not pass by your servant. (Genesis 18:3)**
- **Let a little water be taken, please, and you must have your feet washed. Then recline under the tree. (Genesis 18:4)**
- **And let me get a piece of bread, and refresh your hearts. Following that, you can pass on, because that is why you have passed this way to your servant. At this they said; All right. You may do just as you have spoken. (Genesis 18:5)**
- **At this point the men turned from there and got on their way to Sodom, but as for Yehowah, he was still standing before Abraham. (Genesis 18:22)**
- **Then Abraham approached and began to say; Will you really**

sweep away the righteous with the wicked? (**Genesis 18:23**)

- **Suppose there are fifty righteous men in the midst of the city. Will you, then, sweep them away and not pardon the place for the sake of the fifty righteous who are inside it? (**Genesis 18:24**)**
- **It is unthinkable of you that you are acting in this manner to put to death the righteous man with the wicked one so that it has to occur with the righteous man as it does with the wicked! It is unthinkable of you. Is the Judge of all the earth not going to do what is right? (**Genesis 18:25**)**
- **Then Yehowah said; If I shall find in Sodom fifty righteous men in the midst of the city I will pardon the whole place on their account. (**Genesis 18:26**)**
- **But Abraham went on to answer and say; Please, here I have taken upon myself to speak to Yehowah, whereas I am dust and ashes. (**Genesis 18:27**)**
- **Suppose the fifty righteous should be lacking five. Will you for the five bring the whole city to ruin? To this he said; I shall not bring it to ruin if I find there forty-five. (**Genesis 18:28**)**
- **But yet again he spoke further to him and said; Suppose forty are found there. In turn he said; I shall not do it on account of the forty. (**Genesis 18:29**)**
- **But he continued; May Yehowah, please, not grow hot with anger, but let me go on speaking; Suppose thirty are found there. In turn he said; I shall not do it if I find thirty there. (**Genesis 18:30**)**
- **But he continued on; Please, here I have taken upon myself to speak to Yehowah; Suppose twenty are found there. In turn he said; I shall not bring it to ruin on account of the twenty. (**Genesis 18:31**)**
- **Finally he said; May Yehowah, please, not grow hot with anger, but let me speak just this once; Suppose ten are found there. In turn he said; I shall not bring it to ruin on account of the ten. (**Genesis 18:32**)**
- **Then Yehowah went his way when he had finished speaking to**

- Abraham, and Abraham returned to his place. (**Genesis 18:33**)
- Finally Jacob was left by himself. Then a man began to grapple with him until the dawn ascended. (**Genesis 32:24**)
 - When he got to see that he had not prevailed over him, then he touched the socket of his thigh joint, and the socket of Jacob's thigh joint got out of place during his grappling with him. (**Genesis 32:25**)
 - After that he said; Let me go, for the dawn has ascended. To this he said; I am not going to let you go until you first bless me. (**Genesis 32:26**)
 - So he said to him; What is your name? To which he said; Jacob. (**Genesis 32:27**)
 - Then he said; Your name will no longer be called Jacob but Israel, for you have contended with God and with men so that you at last prevailed. (**Genesis 32:28**)
 - In turn Jacob inquired and said; Tell me, please, your name. However, he said; Why is it that you inquire for my name? With that he blessed him there. (**Genesis 32:29**)
 - Hence Jacob called the name of the place Peniel, because, to quote him, I have seen God face to face and yet my soul was delivered. (**Genesis 32:30**)
 - Later Yehowah's angel came and sat under the big tree that was in Ophrah, which belonged to Joash the Abi-ezrite, while Gideon his son was beating out wheat in the winepress so as to get it quickly out of the sight of Midian. (**Judges 6:11**)
 - Then Yehowah's angel appeared to him and said to him; Yehowah is with you, you valiant, mighty one. (**Judges 6:12**)
 - At this Gideon said to him; Excuse me, my lord, but if Yehowah is with us, then why has all this come upon us, and where are all his wonderful acts that our fathers related to us, saying; Was it not out of Egypt that Yehowah brought us up? And now Yehowah has deserted us, and he gives us into the palm of Midian. (**Judges 6:13**)

- Upon that Yehowah faced him and said; Go in this power of yours, and you will certainly save Israel out of Midian's palm. Do I not send you? (**Judges 6:14**)
- In turn he said to him; Excuse me, Yehowah. With what shall I save Israel? Look! My thousand is the least in Manasseh, and I am the smallest in my father's house. (**Judges 6:15**)
- So it came about that, as the flame ascended from off the altar heavenward, then Yehowah's angel ascended in the flame of the altar while Manoah and his wife were looking on. At once they fell upon their faces to the earth. (**Judges 13:20**)
- And Yehowah's angel did not repeat appearing to Manoah and his wife anymore. Then it was that Manoah knew that he had been Yehowah's angel. (**Judges 13:21**)
- Consequently Manoah said to his wife; We shall positively die, because it is God that we have seen. (**Judges 13:22**)
- **This was because the angelic messenger was acting for Yehowah as his representative, speaking in his name, perhaps using the first person singular pronoun, and even saying; I am the true God.**
- Then the angel of the true God said to me in the dream; Jacob! To which I said; Here I am. (**Genesis 31:11**)
- And he continued; Raise your eyes, please, and see all the he-goats springing upon the flock are striped, speckled and spotty, for I have seen all that Laban is doing to you. (**Genesis 31:12**)
- I am the true God of Bethel, where you anointed a pillar and where you vowed a vow to me. Now get up, go out of this land and return to the land of your birth. (**Genesis 31:13**)
- Then Yehowah's angel went up from Gilgal to Bochim and said; I proceeded to bring you up out of Egypt and to bring you into the land about which I swore to your forefathers. Furthermore, I said; Never shall I break my covenant with you. (**Judges 2:1**)
- And for your part, you must not conclude a covenant with the inhabitants of this land. Their altars you should pull down. But you have not listened to my voice. Why have you done this? (**Judges 2:2**)

- **So I, in turn, have said; I shall not drive them away from before you, and they must become snares to you, and their gods will serve as a lure to you. (Judges 2:3)**
- **And it came about that as soon as Yehowah's angel had spoken these words to all the sons of Israel, the people began to raise their voices and weep. (Judges 2:4)**
- **Hence they called the name of that place Bochim. And they proceeded to sacrifice there to Yehowah. (Judges 2:5)**
- **Thomas may therefore have spoken to **Jesus** as my God in this sense, acknowledging or confessing Jesus as the representative and spokesman of the true God.**
- **Whatever the case, it is certain that Thomas words do not contradict the clear statement he himself had heard Jesus make, namely, The Father is greater than I am.**
- **You heard that I said to you, I am going away and I am coming back to you. If you loved me, you would rejoice that I am going my way to the Father, because the Father is greater than I am. (John 14:28)**

•• **His Birth On Earth**

- **Prior to **Jesus** birth on earth, angels had appeared on this planet in human form, apparently materializing suitable bodies for the occasion, then dematerializing them after completing such assignments.**
- **Now the two angels arrived at Sodom by evening, and Lot was sitting in the gate of Sodom. When Lot caught sight of them, then he got up to meet them and bowed down with his face to the earth. (Genesis 19:1)**
- **And he proceeded to say; Please, now, my lords, turn aside, please, into the house of your servant and stay overnight and have your feet washed. Then you must get up early and travel on your way. To this they said; No, but in the public square is where we shall stay overnight. (Genesis 19:2)**
- **But he was very insistent with them, so that they turned aside to**

him and came into his house. Then he made a feast for them, and he baked unfermented cakes, and they went to eating. **(Genesis 19:3)**

- The angel of the true God now said to him; Take the meat and the unfermented cakes and set them on the big rock there, and pour out the broth. At that he did so. **(Judges 6:20)**
- Then Yehowah's angel thrust out the tip of the staff that was in his hand and touched the meat and the unfermented cakes, and fire began to ascend out of the rock and to consume the meat and the unfermented cakes. As for Yehowah's angel, he vanished from his sight. **(Judges 6:21)**
- Consequently Gideon realized that it was Yehowah's angel. At once Gideon said; Alas, Sovereign Lord Yehowah, for the reason that I have seen Yehowah's angel face to face! **(Judges 6:22)**
- Manoah now said to Yehowah's angel; Let us, please, detain you and fix up a kid of the goats before you. **(Judges 13:15)**
- But Yehowah's angel said to Manoah; If you detain me, I shall not feed myself on your bread, but if you will render up a burnt offering to Yehowah, you may offer it up. For Manoah did not know that he was Yehowah's angel. **(Judges 13:16)**
- Then Manoah said to Yehowah's angel; What is your name, that when your word comes true we shall certainly do you honor? **(Judges 13:17)**
- However, Yehowah's angel said to him; Just why should you ask about my name, when it is a wonderful one? **(Judges 13:18)**
- And Manoah proceeded to take the kid of the goats and the grain offering and to offer it upon the rock to Yehowah. And He was doing something in a wonderful way while Manoah and his wife were looking on. **(Judges 13:19)**
- So it came about that, as the flame ascended from off the altar heavenward, then Yehowah's angel ascended in the flame of the altar while Manoah and his wife were looking on. At once they fell upon their faces to the earth. **(Judges 13:20)**

- They thus remained spirit creatures, merely employing a physical body temporarily. This, however, was not the case with the coming of God's Son to earth to become the man **Jesus**.
- So the Word became flesh and resided among us, and we had a view of his glory, a glory such as belongs to an only-begotten son from a father, and he was full of undeserved kindness and truth. (**John 1:14**)
- Says that, the Word became flesh and resided among us. For that reason he could call himself the Son of man.
- He further said to him; Most truly I say to you men, you will see heaven opened up and the angels of God ascending and descending to the Son of man. (**John 1:51**)
- And just as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, so the Son of man must be lifted up. (**John 3:14**)
- That everyone believing in him may have everlasting life. (**John 3:15**)
- Some draw attention to the expression, resided, literally **tented** among us, and claim this shows **Jesus** was, not a true human, but an incarnation. However, the apostle Peter uses a similar expression about himself, and Peter was obviously not an incarnation.
- But I consider it right, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to rouse you up by way of reminding you. (**2 Peter 1:13**)
- Knowing as I do that the putting off of my tabernacle is soon to be, just as also our Lord **Jesus** Christ signified to me. (**2 Peter 1:14**)
- The inspired Record says; But the birth of **Jesus** Christ was in this way. During the time his mother Mary was promised in marriage to Joseph, she was found to be pregnant by Holy Spirit before they were united.
- But the birth of **Jesus** Christ was in this way. During the time his mother Mary was promised in marriage to Joseph, she was found to be pregnant by Holy Spirit before they were united. (**Matthew 1:18**)

- **Prior to this, Yehowah's angelic messenger had informed the virgin girl Mary that she would **conceive** in her womb as the result of God's Holy Spirit coming upon her and His power overshadowing her.**
- **So the angel said to her; Have no fear, Mary, for you have found favor with God. (Luke 1:30)**
- **And, look! You will conceive in your womb and give birth to a son, and you are to call his name **Jesus**. (Luke 1:31)**
- **But Mary said to the angel; How is this to be, since I am having no intercourse with a man? (Luke 1:34)**
- **In answer the angel said to her; Holy Spirit will come upon you, and power of the Most High will overshadow you. For that reason also what is born will be called holy, God's Son. (Luke 1:35)**
- **Since actual conception took place, it appears that Yehowah God caused an ovum, or egg cell, in Mary's womb to become fertile, accomplishing this by the transferal of the life of his firstborn Son from the spirit realm to earth.**
- **But when the full limit of the time arrived, God sent forth his Son, who came to be out of a woman and who came to be under Law. (Galatians 4:4)**
- **Only in this way could the child eventually born have retained identity as the same **person** who had resided in heaven as the Word, and only in this way could he have been an actual son of Mary and hence a genuine **descendant** of her forefathers Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Judah, and King David and legitimate **heir** of the divine promises made to them.**
- **And Yehowah's angel proceeded to call to Abraham the second time out of the heavens. (Genesis 22:15)**
- **And to say; By myself I do swear, is the utterance of Yehowah, that by reason of the fact that you have done this thing and you have not withheld your son, your only one. (Genesis 22:16)**
- **I shall surely bless you and I shall surely multiply your seed like the stars of the heavens and like the grains of sand that are on the seashore, and your seed will take possession of the gate of**

his enemies. ([Genesis 22:17](#))

- **And by means of your seed all nations of the earth will certainly bless themselves due to the fact that you have listened to my voice. ([Genesis 22:18](#))**
- **And Yehowah proceeded to appear to him during that night and to say; I am the God of Abraham your father. Do not be afraid, because I am with you, and I will bless you and multiply your seed on account of Abraham my servant. ([Genesis 26:24](#))**
- **And Jacob continued on his way out from Beersheba and kept going to Haran. ([Genesis 28:10](#))**
- **In time he came across a place and set about spending the night there because the sun had set. So he took one of the stones of the place and set it as his head supporter and lay down in that place. ([Genesis 28:11](#))**
- **And he began to dream, and, look! There was a ladder stationed upon the earth and its top reaching up to the heavens, and, look! There were God's angels ascending and descending on it. ([Genesis 28:12](#))**
- **And, look! there was Yehowah stationed above it, and he proceeded to say; I am Yehowah the God of Abraham your father and the God of Isaac. The land upon which you are lying, to you I am going to give it and to your seed. ([Genesis 28:13](#))**
- **And your seed will certainly become like the dust particles of the earth, and you will certainly spread abroad to the west and to the east and to the north and to the south, and by means of you and by means of your seed all the families of the ground will certainly bless themselves. ([Genesis 28:14](#))**
- **The scepter will not turn aside from Judah, neither the commander's staff from between his feet, until Shiloh comes, and to him the obedience of the peoples will belong. ([Genesis 49:10](#))**
- **And now this is what you will say to my servant David; This is what Yehowah of armies has said; I myself took you from the pasture ground from following the flock to become a leader over my people Israel. ([2 Samuel 7:8](#))**

- **Even from the day that I put judges in command over my people Israel, and I will give you rest from all your enemies. And Yehowah has told you that a house is what Yehowah will make for you. (2 Samuel 7:11)**
- **When your days come to the full, and you must lie down with your forefathers, then I shall certainly raise up your seed after you, which will come out of your inward parts, and I shall indeed firmly establish his kingdom. (2 Samuel 7:12)**
- **He is the one that will build a house for my name, and I shall certainly establish the throne of his kingdom firmly to time indefinite. (2 Samuel 7:13)**
- **I myself shall become his father, and he himself will become my son. When he does wrong, I will also reprove him with the rod of men and with the strokes of the sons of Adam. (2 Samuel 7:14)**
- **As for my loving-kindness, it will not depart from him the way I removed it from Saul, whom I removed on account of you. (2 Samuel 7:15)**
- **And your house and your kingdom will certainly be steadfast to time indefinite before you, your very throne will become one firmly established to time indefinite. (2 Samuel 7:16)**
- **Furthermore, Jesus himself, when he commenced his work, was about thirty years old, being the son, as the opinion was, of Joseph, son of Heli. (Luke 3:23)**
- **Son of Matthat, son of Levi, son of Melchi, son of Jannai, son of Joseph. (Luke 3:24)**
- **Son of Mattathias, son of Amos, son of Nahum, son of Esli, son of Naggai. (Luke 3:25)**
- **Son of Maath, son of Mattathias, son of Semein, son of Josech, son of Joda. (Luke 3:26)**
- **Son of Joanan, son of Rhesa, son of Zerubbabel, son of Shealtiel, son of Neri. (Luke 3:27)**
- **Son of Melchi, son of Addi, son of Cosam, son of Elmadam, son of Er. (Luke 3:28)**

- Son of Jesus, son of Eliezer, son of Jorim, son of Matthat, son of Levi. (**Luke 3:29**)
- Son of Symeon, son of Judas, son of Joseph, son of Jonam, son of Eliakim. (**Luke 3:30**)
- Son of Melea, son of Menna, son of Mattatha, son of Nathan, son of David. (**Luke 3:31**)
- Son of Jesse, son of Obed, son of Boaz, son of Salmon, son of Nahshon. (**Luke 3:32**)
- Son of Amminadab, son of Arni, son of Hezron, son of Perez, son of Judah. (**Luke 3:33**)
- Son of Jacob, son of Isaac, son of Abraham, son of Terah, son of Nahor. (**Luke 3:34**)
- It is likely, therefore, that the child born resembled its Jewish mother in certain physical characteristics.

See Also GENEALOGY OF JESUS CHRIST

- Mary was a descendant of the sinner Adam, hence herself imperfect and sinful. The question therefore is raised as to how **Jesus**, Mary's firstborn.
- And she gave birth to her son, the firstborn, and she bound him with cloth bands and laid him in a manger, because there was no place for them in the lodging room. (**Luke 2:7**)
- Could be perfect and free from sin in his physical organism. While modern geneticists have learned much about laws of heredity and about dominant and recessive characteristics, they have had no experience in learning the results of uniting perfection with imperfection, as was the case with **Jesus** conception.
- From the results revealed in the Bible, it would appear that the perfect male life-force, causing the conception, canceled out any imperfection existent in Mary's ovum, thereby producing a genetic pattern, and embryonic development, that was perfect from its start.

- **Whatever the case, the operation of God's Holy Spirit at the time guaranteed the success of God's purpose. As the angel Gabriel explained to Mary, power of the Most High overshadowed her so that what was born was holy, God's Son. God's Holy Spirit formed, as it were, a protective wall so that no imperfection or hurtful force could damage, or blemish, the developing embryo, from conception on.**
- **In answer the angel said to her; Holy spirit will come upon you, and power of the Most High will overshadow you. For that reason also what is born will be called holy, God's Son. (Luke 1:35)**
- **Since it was God's Holy Spirit that made the birth possible, Jesus owed his human life to his heavenly Father, not to any man, such as his adoptive father Joseph**
- **After they had withdrawn, look! Yehowah's angel appeared in a dream to Joseph, saying; Get up, take the young child and its mother and flee into Egypt, and stay there until I give you word, for Herod is about to search for the young child to destroy it. (Matthew 2:13)**
- **So he got up and took along the young child and its mother by night and withdrew into Egypt. (Matthew 2:14)**
- **And he stayed there until the decease of Herod, for that to be fulfilled which was spoken by Yehowah through his prophet, saying; Out of Egypt I called my son. (Matthew 2:15)**
- **Furthermore, Jesus himself, when he commenced his work, was about thirty years old, being the son, as the opinion was, of Joseph, son of Heli. (Luke 3:23)**
- **Hence when he comes into the world he says: Sacrifice and offering you did not want, but you prepared a body for me. (Hebrews 10:5)**
- **States, Yehowah God prepared a body for him, and Jesus, from conception onward, was truly undefiled, separated from the sinners.**
- **For such a High Priest as this was suitable for us, loyal, guileless, undefiled, separated from the sinners, and become higher than the heavens. (Hebrews 7:26)**

- **Who of you convicts me of sin? If I speak truth, why is it you do not believe me?**
- **They said to him; Teacher, this woman has been caught in the act of committing adultery. (John 8:4)**
- **In fact, to this course you were called, because even Christ suffered for you, leaving you a model for you to follow his steps closely. (1 Peter 2:21)**
- **He committed no sin, nor was deception found in his mouth. (1 Peter 2:22)**
- **The Messianic prophecy at;**
- **To the extent that many have stared at him in amazement, so much was the disfigurement as respects his appearance more than that of any other man and as respects his stately form more than that of the sons of mankind. (Isaiah 52:14)**
- **Which speaks of the disfigurement as respects his appearance, therefore must apply to Jesus the Messiah only in a figurative way.**
- **How comely upon the mountains are the feet of the one bringing Good News, the one publishing peace, the one bringing Good News of something better, the one publishing salvation, the one saying to Zion; Your God has become king! (Isaiah 52:7)**
- **Though he was perfect in physical form, the message of truth and righteousness that Jesus Christ boldly proclaimed made him repulsive in the eyes of hypocritical opposers, who claimed to see in him an agent of Beelzebub, a man possessed of a demon, a blasphemous fraud.**
- **At hearing this, the Pharisees said; This fellow does not expel the demons except by means of Beelzebub, the ruler of the demons. (Matthew 12:24)**
- **So the passersby began speaking abusively of him, wagging their heads (Matthew 27:39)**
- **And saying; O you would-be thrower-down of the temple and builder of it in three days, save yourself! If you are a son of God, come down off the torture stake! (Matthew 27:40)**

- **In like manner also the chief priests with the scribes and older men began making fun of him and saying; (Matthew 27:41)**
- **Others he saved. Himself he cannot save! He is King of Israel, let him now come down off the torture stake and we will believe on him. (Matthew 27:42)**
- **He has put his trust in God. Let Him now rescue him if He wants him, for he said; I am God's Son. (Matthew 27:43)**
- **In answer the Jews said to him; Do we not rightly say; You are a Samaritan and have a demon? (John 8:48)**
- **These things I command you, that you love one another. (John 15:17)**
- **If the world hates you, you know that it has hated me before it hated you. (John 15:18)**
- **If you were part of the world, the world would be fond of what is its own. Now because you are no part of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, on this account the world hates you. (John 15:19)**
- **Bear in mind the word I said to you, a slave is not greater than his master. If they have persecuted me, they will persecute you also. If they have observed my word, they will observe yours also. (John 15:20)**
- **But they will do all these things against you on account of my name, because they do not know him that sent me. (John 15:21)**
- **If I had not come and spoken to them, they would have no sin, but now they have no excuse for their sin. (John 15:22)**
- **He that hates me hates also my Father. (John 15:23)**
- **If I had not done among them the works that no one else did, they would have no sin, but now they have both seen and hated me as well as my Father. (John 15:24)**
- **But it is that the word written in their Law may be fulfilled; They hated me without cause. (John 15:25)**

- In a similar way the message proclaimed by **Jesus** disciples later caused them to be a sweet odor of life to receptive persons, but an odor of death to those rejecting their message.
- But thanks be to God who always leads us in a triumphal procession in company with the Christ and makes the odor of the knowledge of him perceptible through us in every place! (**2 Corinthians 2:14**)
- For to God we are a sweet odor of Christ among those who are being saved and among those who are perishing. (**2 Corinthians 2:15**)
- To the latter ones an odor issuing from death to death, to the former ones an odor issuing from life to life. And who is adequately qualified for these things? (**2 Corinthians 2:16**)

•• Time Of Birth - Length Of Ministry

- **Jesus** evidently was born in the month of Ethanim, **September-October**, of the year **2 B.C.E.**, was baptized about the same time of the year in **29 C.E.**, and died about 3:00 p.m. on Friday, the 14th day of the spring month of Nisan, **March-April, 33 C.E.** The basis for these dates is as follows.
- Jesus was born approximately six months after the birth of his relative John the Baptizer, during the rule of Roman Emperor Caesar Augustus, **31 B.C.E.–14 C.E.**, and the Syrian governorship of Quirinius for the probable dates of Quirinius administration, and toward the close of the reign of Herod the Great over Judea.

See Also **REGISTRATION**

- After **Jesus** had been born in Bethlehem of Judea in the days of Herod the king, look! Astrologers from eastern parts came to Jerusalem. (**Matthew 2:1**)
- After they had withdrawn, look! Yehowah's angel appeared in a dream to Joseph, saying; Get up, take the young child and its mother and flee into Egypt, and stay there until I give you word, for Herod is about to search for the young child to destroy it. (**Matthew 2:13**)

- **And said, Get up, take the young child and its mother and be on your way into the land of Israel, for those who were seeking the soul of the young child are dead. (Matthew 2:20)**
- **So he got up and took the young child and its mother and entered into the land of Israel. (Matthew 2:21)**
- **But hearing that Archelaus ruled as king of Judea instead of his father Herod, he became afraid to depart for there. Moreover, being given divine warning in a dream, he withdrew into the territory of Galilee. (Matthew 2:22)**
- **But after these days Elizabeth his wife became pregnant, and she kept herself secluded for five months, saying; (Luke 1:24)**
- **This is the way Yehowah has dealt with me in these days when he has given me his attention to take away my reproach among men. (Luke 1:25)**
- **In her sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent forth from God to a city of Galilee named Nazareth. (Luke 1:26)**
- **To a virgin promised in marriage to a man named Joseph of David's house, and the name of the virgin was Mary. (Luke 1:27)**
- **And when he went in before her he said; Good day, highly favored one, Yehowah is with you. (Luke 1:28)**
- **But she was deeply disturbed at the saying and began to reason out what sort of greeting this might be. (Luke 1:29)**
- **So the angel said to her; Have no fear, Mary, for you have found favor with God. (Luke 1:30)**
- **And, look! You will conceive in your womb and give birth to a son, and you are to call his name Jesus. (Luke 1:31)**
- **And, look! Elizabeth your relative has also herself conceived a son, in her old age, and this is the sixth month for her, the so-called barren woman. (Luke 1:36)**
- **Now in those days a decree went forth from Caesar Augustus for all the inhabited earth to be registered. (Luke 2:1)**

- This first registration took place when Quirinius was governor of Syria. (**Luke 2:2**)
- And she gave birth to her son, the firstborn, and she bound him with cloth bands and laid him in a manger, because there was no place for them in the lodging room. (**Luke 2:7**)

See Also REGISTRATION

· His Birth In Relation To Herod's Death

- While the date of Herod's death is a debated one, there is considerable evidence pointing to **1 B.C.E.** A number of events intervened between the time of **Jesus** birth and Herod's death. These included Jesus circumcision on the eighth day.
- Now when eight days came to the full for circumcising him, his name was also called **Jesus**, the name called by the angel before he was conceived in the womb. (**Luke 2:21**)
- His being brought to the temple in Jerusalem 40 days after birth.
- Also, when the days for purifying them according to the Law of Moses came to the full, they brought him up to Jerusalem to present him to Yehowah. (**Luke 2:22**)
- Just as it is written in Yehowah's Law: Every male opening a womb must be called holy to Yehowah. (**Luke 2:23**)
- And Yehowah went on to speak to Moses, saying; (**Leviticus 12:1**)
- Speak to the sons of Israel, saying; In case a woman conceives seed and does bear a male, she must be unclean seven days, as in the days of the impurity when she is menstruating she will be unclean. (**Leviticus 12:2**)
- And on the eighth day the flesh of his foreskin will be circumcised. (**Leviticus 12:3**)
- For thirty-three days more she will stay in the blood of purification. She should not touch any holy thing, and she should not come into the holy place until the fulfilling of the days of her purification. (**Leviticus 12:4**)

- But if she cannot afford enough for a sheep, she must then take two turtledoves or two young pigeons, one for a burnt offering and one for a sin offering, and the priest must make atonement for her, and she must be clean. ([Leviticus 12:8](#))
- The journey of the astrologers from eastern parts to Bethlehem where **Jesus** was no longer in a manger but in a house.
- After **Jesus** had been born in Bethlehem of Judea in the days of Herod the king, look! Astrologers from eastern parts came to Jerusalem. ([Matthew 2:1](#))
- Saying; Where is the one born king of the Jews? For we saw his star when we were in the east, and we have come to do him obeisance. ([Matthew 2:2](#))
- At hearing this King Herod was agitated, and all Jerusalem along with him. ([Matthew 2:3](#))
- And on gathering together all the chief priests and scribes of the people he began to inquire of them where the Christ was to be born. ([Matthew 2:4](#))
- They said to him; In Bethlehem of Judea, for this is how it has been written through the prophet. ([Matthew 2:5](#))
- And you, O Bethlehem of the land of Judah, are by no means the most insignificant city among the governor's of Judah, for out of you will come forth a governing one, who will shepherd my people, Israel. ([Matthew 2:6](#))
- Then Herod secretly summoned the astrologers and carefully ascertained from them the time of the stars appearing. ([Matthew 2:7](#))
- And, when sending them to Bethlehem, he said; Go make a careful search for the young child, and when you have found it report back to me, that I too may go and do it obeisance. ([Matthew 2:8](#))
- When they had heard the king, they went their way, and, look! The star they had seen when they were in the east went ahead of them, until it came to a stop above where the young child was.

(Matthew 2:9)

- **On seeing the star they rejoiced very much indeed. (Matthew 2:10)**
- **And when they went into the house they saw the young child with Mary its mother, and, falling down, they did obeisance to it. They also opened their treasures and presented it with gifts, gold and frankincense and myrrh. (Matthew 2:11)**
- **And she gave birth to her son, the firstborn, and she bound him with cloth bands and laid him in a manger, because there was no place for them in the lodging room. (Luke 2:7)**
- **So when the angels had departed from them into heaven, the shepherds began saying to one another; Let us by all means go clear to Bethlehem and see this thing that has taken place, which Yehowah has made known to us. (Luke 2:15)**
- **And they went with haste and found Mary as well as Joseph, and the infant lying in the manger. (Luke 2:16)**
- **Joseph and Mary's flight to Egypt with the young child**
- **After they had withdrawn, look! Yehowah's angel appeared in a dream to Joseph, saying; Get up, take the young child and its mother and flee into Egypt, and stay there until I give you word, for Herod is about to search for the young child to destroy it. (Matthew 2:13)**
- **So he got up and took along the young child and its mother by night and withdrew into Egypt. (Matthew 2:14)**
- **And he stayed there until the decease of Herod, for that to be fulfilled which was spoken by Yehowah through his prophet, saying; Out of Egypt I called my son. (Matthew 2:15)**
- **Followed by Herod's realization that the astrologers had not followed his instructions, and the subsequent slaughter of all boys in Bethlehem and its districts under the age of two years, indicating that **Jesus** was not then a newborn infant.**
- **Then Herod, seeing he had been outwitted by the astrologers, fell into a great rage, and he sent out and had all the boys in**

- Bethlehem and in all its districts done away with, from two years of age and under, according to the time that he had carefully ascertained from the astrologers. (**Matthew 2:16**)
- Then that was fulfilled which was spoken through Jeremiah the prophet, saying; (**Matthew 2:17**)
 - A voice was heard in Ramah, weeping and much wailing, it was Rachel weeping for her children, and she was unwilling to take comfort, because they are no more. (**Matthew 2:18**)
 - **Jesus** birth taking place in the fall of **2 B.C.E.** would allow for the time required by these events intervening between his birth and the death of Herod, likely in **1 B.C.E.** There is, however, added reason for placing Jesus birth in **2 B.C.E.**

See Also HEROD 1 (Date of His Death)
See Also CHRONOLOGY (Lunar eclipses)

• Relationship To John's Ministry

- Further basis for the dates given at the start of this section is found at;
- In the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Caesar, when Pontius Pilate was governor of Judea, and Herod was district ruler of Galilee, but Philip his brother was district ruler of the country of Ituraea and Trachonitis, and Lysanias was district ruler of Abilene. (**Luke 3:1**)
- In the days of chief priest Annas and of Caiaphas, God's declaration came to John the son of Zechariah in the wilderness. (**Luke 3:2**)
- So he came into all the country around the Jordan, preaching baptism in symbol of repentance for forgiveness of sins. (**Luke 3:3**)
- Which shows that John the Baptizer began his preaching and baptizing in, the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Caesar. That 15th year ran from the latter half of **28 C.E.** to August or September of **29 C.E.**

- At some point in John's ministry, **Jesus** went to him and was baptized. When Jesus thereafter commenced his own ministry he was about thirty years old.
- Now when all the people were baptized, **Jesus** also was baptized and, as he was praying, the heaven was opened up. (**Luke 3:21**)
- And the Holy Spirit in bodily shape like a dove came down upon him, and a voice came out of heaven; You are my Son, the beloved. I have approved you. (**Luke 3:22**)
- Furthermore, **Jesus** himself, when he commenced his work, was about thirty years old, being the son, as the opinion was, of Joseph, son of Heli. (**Luke 3:23**)
- At the age of 30, the age at which David became king, **Jesus** would no longer be subject to human parents.
- Thirty years old was David when he became king. For forty years he ruled as king. (**2 Samuel 5:4**)
- In Hebron he ruled as king over Judah for seven years and six months, and in Jerusalem he ruled as king for thirty-three years over all Israel and Judah. (**2 Samuel 5:5**)
- And he went down with them and came to Nazareth, and he continued subject to them. Also, his mother carefully kept all these sayings in her heart. (**Luke 2:51**)

See Also TIBERIUS

- Sum of the sons of Kohath from among the sons of Levi, according to their families in the house of their fathers. (**Numbers 4:1**)
- Sum of the sons of Kohath from among the sons of Levi, according to their families in the house of their fathers. (**Numbers 4:1**)
- From thirty years old upward to fifty years old, all those going into the service group to do the work in the tent of meeting. (**Numbers 4:3**)
- There will be a taking of the sum of the sons of Gershon, yes,

- them by the house of their fathers according to their families. **(Numbers 4:22)**
- From thirty years old upward to fifty years you will register them, all who come to enter into the service group to render service in the tent of meeting. **(Numbers 4:23)**
 - As for the sons of Merari, you will register them by their families in the house of their fathers. **(Numbers 4:29)**
 - From thirty years old upward to fifty years you will register them, all who enter into the service group to render the service of the tent of meeting. **(Numbers 4:30)**
 - Those going into sanctuary service under the Law covenant were from thirty years old upward. It is reasonable that John the Baptizer, who was a Levite and son of a priest, began his ministry at the same age, not at the temple, of course, but in the special assignment Yehowah had outlined for him.
 - Whereas many have undertaken to compile a statement of the facts that are given full credence among us. **(Luke 1:1)**
 - Just as those who from the beginning became eyewitnesses and attendants of the message delivered these to us. **(Luke 1:2)**
 - I resolved also, because I have traced all things from the start with accuracy, to write them in logical order to you, most excellent Theophilus. **(Luke 1:3)**
 - That you may know fully the certainty of the things that you have been taught orally. **(Luke 1:4)**
 - In the days of Herod, king of Judea, there happened to be a certain priest named Zechariah of the division of Abijah, and he had a wife from the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elizabeth. **(Luke 1:5)**
 - They both were righteous before God because of walking blamelessly in accord with all the commandments and legal requirements of Yehowah. **(Luke 1:6)**
 - But they had no child, because Elizabeth was barren, and they both were well along in years. **(Luke 1:7)**

- **Now as he was acting as priest in the assignment of his division before God. (Luke 1:8)**
- **According to the solemn practice of the priestly office it became his turn to offer incense when he entered into the sanctuary of Yehowah. (Luke 1:9)**
- **And all the multitude of the people was praying outside at the hour of offering incense. (Luke 1:10)**
- **To him Yehowah's angel appeared, standing at the right side of the incense altar. (Luke 1:11)**
- **But Zechariah became troubled at the sight, and fear fell upon him. (Luke 1:12)**
- **However, the angel said to him; Have no fear, Zechariah, because your supplication has been favorably heard, and your wife Elizabeth will become mother to a son to you, and you are to call his name John. (Luke 1:13)**
- **And you will have joy and great gladness, and many will rejoice over his birth. (Luke 1:14)**
- **For he will be great before Yehowah. But he must drink no wine and strong drink at all, and he will be filled with Holy Spirit right from his mother's womb. (Luke 1:15)**
- **And many of the sons of Israel will he turn back to Yehowah their God. (Luke 1:16)**
- **Also, he will go before him with Elijah's spirit and power, to turn back the hearts of fathers to children and the disobedient ones to the practical wisdom of righteous ones, to get ready for Yehowah a prepared people. (Luke 1:17)**
- **And Zechariah its father was filled with Holy Spirit, and he prophesied, saying; (Luke 1:67)**
- **But as for you, young child, you will be called a prophet of the Most High, for you will go in advance before Yehowah to make his ways ready. (Luke 1:76)**

- To give knowledge of salvation to his people by forgiveness of their sins. (**Luke 1:77**)
- Because of the tender compassion of our God. With this compassion a daybreak will visit us from on high. (**Luke 1:78**)
- To give light to those sitting in darkness and death's shadow, to direct our feet prosperously in the way of peace. (**Luke 1:79**)
- The specific mention, twice, of the age difference between John and **Jesus** and the correlation between the appearances and messages of Yehowah's angel in announcing the births of the two sons (**Luke Chapter 1**) give ample basis for believing that their ministries followed a similar timetable, that is, the start of John's ministry, as the forerunner of Jesus, being followed about six months later by the commencement of Jesus ministry.
- On this basis, John's birth occurred 30 years before he began his ministry in Tiberius 15th year, hence somewhere between the latter half of **3 B.C.E.** and **August or September of 2 B.C.E.**, with **Jesus** birth following about six months later.

• Evidence For Three-And-A-Half-Year Ministry

- Through the remaining chronological evidence an even more definite conclusion can be reached. This evidence deals with the length of **Jesus** ministry and time of death. The prophecy at;
- There are seventy weeks that have been determined upon your people and upon your holy city, in order to terminate the transgression, and to finish off sin, and to make atonement for error, and to bring in righteousness for times indefinite, and to imprint a seal upon vision and prophet, and to anoint the Holy of Holies. (**Daniel 9:24**)
- And you should know and have the insight that from the going forth of the word to restore and to rebuild Jerusalem until Messiah the Leader, there will be seven weeks, also sixty-two weeks. She will return and be actually rebuilt, with a public square and moat, but in the straits of the times. (**Daniel 9:25**)
- And after the sixty-two weeks Messiah will be cut off, with nothing for himself. And the city and the holy place the people of a leader that is coming will bring to their ruin. And the end of it

will be by the flood. And until the end there will be war, what is decided upon is desolations. ([Daniel 9:26](#))

- **And he must keep the covenant in force for the many for one week, and at the half of the week he will cause sacrifice and gift offering to cease. And upon the wing of disgusting things there will be the one causing desolation, and until an extermination, the very thing decided upon will go pouring out also upon the one lying desolate. ([Daniel 9:27](#))**

See Also SEVENTY WEEKS

- **Points to the appearance of the Messiah at the start of the 70th week of years**
- **And you should know and have the insight that from the going forth of the word to restore and to rebuild Jerusalem until Messiah the Leader, there will be seven weeks, also sixty-two weeks. She will return and be actually rebuilt, with a public square and moat, but in the straits of the times. ([Daniel 9:25](#))**
- **And his sacrificial death in the middle or at the half of the final week, thereby ending the validity of the sacrifices and gift offerings under the Law covenant.**
- **And after the sixty-two weeks Messiah will be cut off, with nothing for himself. And the city and the holy place the people of a leader that is coming will bring to their ruin. And the end of it will be by the flood. And until the end there will be war. What is decided upon is desolations. ([Daniel 9:26](#))**
- **And he must keep the covenant in force for the many for one week, and at the half of the week he will cause sacrifice and gift offering to cease. And upon the wing of disgusting things there will be the one causing desolation, and until an extermination, the very thing decided upon will go pouring out also upon the one lying desolate. ([Daniel 9:27](#))**
- **This very tent is an illustration for the appointed time that is now here, and in keeping with it both gifts and sacrifices are offered. However, these are not able to make the man doing sacred service perfect as respects his conscience. ([Hebrews 9:9](#))**
- **But have to do only with foods and drinks and various baptisms.**

- They were legal requirements pertaining to the flesh and were imposed until the appointed time to set things straight. (Hebrews 9:10)**
- **However, when Christ came as a High Priest of the good things that have come to pass, through the greater and more perfect tent not made with hands, that is, not of this creation. (Hebrews 9:11)**
 - **He entered, no, not with the blood of goats and of young bulls, but with his own blood, once for all time into the holy place and obtained an everlasting deliverance for us. (Hebrews 9:12)**
 - **For if the blood of goats and of bulls and the ashes of a heifer sprinkled on those who have been defiled sanctifies to the extent of cleanness of the flesh. (Hebrews 9:13)**
 - **How much more will the blood of the Christ, who through an everlasting spirit offered himself without blemish to God, cleanse our consciences from dead works that we may render sacred service to the living God? (Hebrews 9:14)**
 - **For since the Law has a shadow of the good things to come, but not the very substance of the things, men can never with the same sacrifices from year to year which they offer continually make those who approach perfect. (Hebrews 10:1)**
 - **Otherwise, would the sacrifices not have stopped being offered, because those rendering sacred service who had been cleansed once for all time would have no consciousness of sins anymore? (Hebrews 10:2)**
 - **To the contrary, by these sacrifices there is a reminding of sins from year to year. (Hebrews 10:3)**
 - **For it is not possible for the blood of bulls and of goats to take sins away. (Hebrews 10:4)**
 - **Hence when he comes into the world he says; Sacrifice and offering you did not want, but you prepared a body for me. (Hebrews 10:5)**
 - **You did not approve of whole burnt offerings and sin offering. (Hebrews 10:6)**

- Then I said; Look! I am come, in the roll of the book it is written about me, to do your will, O God. (**Hebrews 10:7**)
- After first saying; You did not want nor did you approve of sacrifices and offerings and whole burnt offerings and sin offerings, sacrifices that are offered according to the Law. (**Hebrews 10:8**)
- Then he actually says; Look! I am come to do your will. He does away with what is first that he may establish what is second. (**Hebrews 10:9**)
- By the said, **will**, we have been sanctified through the offering of the body of **Jesus** Christ once for all time. (**Hebrews 10:10**)
- This would mean a ministry of three and a half years duration, half of a week of seven years, for **Jesus** Christ.

See Also SEVENTY WEEKS

- For **Jesus** ministry to have lasted three and a half years, ending with his death at Passover time, would require that that period include four Passovers in all. Evidence for these four Passovers is found at,
 - Now the Passover of the Jews was near, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. (**John 2:13**)
 - After these things there was a festival of the Jews, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. (**John 5:1**)
 - Now the Passover, the festival of the Jews, was near. (**John 6:4**)
 - Now, because he knew before the festival of the Passover that his hour had come for him to move out of this world to the Father, Jesus, having loved his own that were in the world, loved them to the end. (**John 13:1**)
 - After these things there was a festival of the Jews, and **Jesus** went up to Jerusalem. (**John 5:1**)
- Does not specifically mention the Passover, referring only to a festival of the Jews. There is, however, good reason to believe this refers to the Passover rather than to any other of the annual festivals.

- Do you not say that there are yet four months before the harvest comes? Look! I say to you; Lift up your eyes and view the fields, that they are white for harvesting. (**John 4:35**)
- **Jesus** is mentioned as saying that there were, yet four months before the harvest. The harvest season, particularly the barley harvest, got under way about Passover time **Nisan 14**.
- Hence Jesus statement was made four months before that or about the month of **Chislev, November-December**. The postexilic Festival of Dedication came during Chislev but it was not one of the great festivals requiring attendance at Jerusalem.
- Three times in the year you are to celebrate a festival to me. (**Exodus 23:14**)
- You will keep the festival of unfermented cakes. You will eat unfermented cakes seven days, just as I have commanded you, at the appointed time in the month of Abib, because in it you came out of Egypt. And they must not appear before me empty-handed. (**Exodus 23:15**)
- Also, the festival of harvest of the first ripe fruits of your labors, of what you sow in the field, and the festival of ingathering at the outgoing of the year, when you gather in your labors from the field. (**Exodus 23:16**)
- On three occasions in the year every male of yours will appear before the face of the true Lord, Yehowah. (**Exodus 23:17**)
- These are the seasonal festivals of Yehowah, holy conventions, which you should proclaim at their appointed times: (**Leviticus 23:4**)
- In the first month, on the fourteenth day of the month, between the two evenings is the Passover to Yehowah. (**Leviticus 23:5**)
- And on the fifteenth day of this month is the festival of unfermented cakes to Yehowah. Seven days you should eat unfermented cakes. (**Leviticus 23:6**)
- On the first day you will have a holy convention occur. No sort of laborious work may you do. (**Leviticus 23:7**)

- **But you must present an offering made by fire to Yehowah seven days. On the seventh day there will be a holy convention. No sort of laborious work may you do. (Leviticus 23:8)**
- **And Yehowah continued to speak to Moses, saying; (Leviticus 23:9)**
- **Speak to the sons of Israel, and you must say to them; When you eventually come into the land that I am giving you, and you have reaped its harvest, you must also bring a sheaf of the firstfruits of your harvest to the priest. (Leviticus 23:10)**
- **And he must wave the sheaf to and fro before Yehowah to gain approval for you. Directly the day after the Sabbath the priest should wave it to and fro. (Leviticus 23:11)**
- **And on the day of your having the sheaf waved to and fro you must render up a sound young ram, in its first year, for a burnt offering to Yehowah. (Leviticus 23:12)**
- **And as its grain offering two tenths of an ephah of fine flour moistened with oil, as an offering made by fire to Yehowah, a restful odor, and as its drink offering a fourth of a hin of wine. (Leviticus 23:13)**
- **And you must eat no bread nor roasted grain nor new grain until this very day, until your bringing the offering of your God. It is a statute to time indefinite for your generations in all places where you dwell. (Leviticus 23:14)**
- **And you must count for yourselves from the day after the Sabbath, from the day of your bringing the sheaf of the wave offering, seven Sabbaths. They should prove to be complete. (Leviticus 23:15)**
- **To the day after the seventh Sabbath you should count, fifty days, and you must present a new grain offering to Yehowah. (Leviticus 23:16)**
- **Out of your dwelling places you should bring two loaves as a wave offering. Of two tenths of an ephah of fine flour they should prove to be. They should be baked leavened, as first ripe fruits to Yehowah. (Leviticus 23:17)**

- **And you must present along with the loaves seven sound male lambs, each a year old, and one young bull and two rams. They should serve as a burnt offering to Yehowah along with their grain offering and their drink offerings as an offering made by fire, of a restful odor to Yehowah. (Leviticus 23:18)**
- **And you must render up one kid of the goats as a sin offering and two male lambs, each a year old, as a communion sacrifice. (Leviticus 23:19)**
- **And the priest must wave them to and fro along with the loaves of the first ripe fruits, as a wave offering before Yehowah, along with the two male lambs. They should serve as something holy to Yehowah for the priest. (Leviticus 23:20)**
- **And you must make a proclamation on this very day, there will be a holy convention for yourselves. No sort of laborious work may you do. It is a statute to time indefinite in all your dwelling places for your generations. (Leviticus 23:21)**
- **And when you people reap the harvest of your land, you must not do completely the edge of your field when you are reaping, and the gleaning of your harvest you must not pick up. You should leave them for the afflicted one and the alien resident. I am Yehowah your God. (Leviticus 23:22)**
- **And Yehowah went on speaking to Moses, saying; (Leviticus 23:23)**
- **Speak to the sons of Israel, saying; In the seventh month, on the first of the month, there should occur for you a complete rest, a memorial by the trumpet blast, a holy convention. (Leviticus 23:24)**
- **No sort of laborious work may you do, and you must present an offering made by fire to Yehowah. (Leviticus 23:25)**
- **And Yehowah spoke further to Moses, saying; (Leviticus 23:26)**
- **However, on the tenth of this seventh month is the day of atonement. A holy convention should take place for you, and you must afflict your souls and present an offering made by fire to Yehowah. (Leviticus 23:27)**

- **And you must do no sort of work on this very day, because it is a day of atonement to make atonement for you before Yehowah your God. (Leviticus 23:28)**
- **Because every soul that will not be afflicted on this very day must be cut off from his people. (Leviticus 23:29)**
- **As for any soul that will do any sort of work on this very day, I must destroy that soul from among his people. (Leviticus 23:30)**
- **You must do no sort of work. It is a statute to time indefinite for your generations in all places where you dwell. (Leviticus 23:31)**
- **It is a Sabbath of complete rest for you, and you must afflict your souls on the ninth of the month in the evening. From evening to evening you should observe your Sabbath. (Leviticus 23:32)**
- **And Yehowah continued to speak to Moses, saying; (Leviticus 23:33)**
- **Speak to the sons of Israel, saying; On the fifteenth day of this seventh month is the festival of booths for seven days to Yehowah. (Leviticus 23:34)**
- **On the first day is a holy convention. No sort of laborious work may you do. (Leviticus 23:35)**
- **Seven days you should present an offering made by fire to Yehowah. On the eighth day there should occur a holy convention for you, and you must present an offering made by fire to Yehowah. It is a solemn assembly. No sort of laborious work may you do. (Leviticus 23:36)**
- **These are the seasonal festivals of Yehowah that you should proclaim as holy conventions, for presenting an offering made by fire to Yehowah, the burnt offering and the grain offering of the sacrifice and the drink offerings according to the daily schedule. (Leviticus 23:37)**
- **Besides the Sabbaths of Yehowah and besides your gifts and besides all your vow offerings and besides all your voluntary offerings, which you should give to Yehowah. (Leviticus 23:38)**

- However, on the fifteenth day of the seventh month, when you have gathered the produce of the land, you should celebrate the festival of Yehowah seven days. On the first day is a complete rest and on the eighth day is a complete rest. (**Leviticus 23:39**)
- And you must take for yourselves on the first day the fruit of splendid trees, the fronds of palm trees and the boughs of branchy trees and poplars of the torrent valley, and you must rejoice before Yehowah your God seven days. (**Leviticus 23:40**)
- And you must celebrate it as a festival to Yehowah seven days in the year. As a statute to time indefinite during your generations, you should celebrate it in the seventh month. (**Leviticus 23:41**)
- It is in the booths you should dwell seven days. All the natives in Israel should dwell in the booths. (**Leviticus 23:42**)
- In order, that your generations may know that it was in the booths that I made the sons of Israel to dwell when I was bringing them out of the land of Egypt. I am Yehowah your God. (**Leviticus 23:43**)
- Accordingly Moses spoke of the seasonal festivals of Yehowah to the sons of Israel. (**Leviticus 23:44**)
- Celebration was held throughout the land in the many synagogues, according to Jewish tradition. Later, at;
- At that time the festival of dedication took place in Jerusalem. It was wintertime. (**John 10:22**)
- **Jesus** is specifically mentioned as attending one such Festival of Dedication in Jerusalem, however, it appears that he had already been in that area since the earlier Festival of Booths, hence had not gone there especially for that purpose. Different from this,
- After these things there was a festival of the Jews, and **Jesus** went up to Jerusalem. (**John 5:1**)
- Clearly implies that it was the particular festival of the Jews that caused **Jesus** to go from Galilee.
- Again this was the second sign **Jesus** performed when he came out of Judea into Galilee. (**John 4:54**)

See Also FESTIVAL OF DEDICATION

- The only other festival between Chislev and Passover time was that of Purim, held in Adar, **February-March**, about one month before Passover.
- But the postexilic Feast of Purim was likewise celebrated throughout the land in homes and synagogues. So, the Passover seems to be the most likely festival of the Jews referred to at;
- After these things there was a festival of the Jews, and **Jesus** went up to Jerusalem. (**John 5:1**)
- **Jesus** attendance at Jerusalem then being in conformity to God's Law to Israel. It is true that John thereafter records only a few events before the next mention of the Passover.
- Now the Passover, the festival of the Jews, was near. (**John 6:4**)
- But a consideration of the chart of the Main Events of **Jesus** Earthly Life will show that John's coverage of Jesus early ministry was very abbreviated, many events already discussed by the other three evangelists being passed over.
- In fact, the great amount of activity of Jesus as recorded by these other evangelists, Matthew, Mark, and Luke lends weight to the conclusion that an annual Passover did indeed intervene between those recorded at;
- Now the Passover of the Jews was near, and **Jesus** went up to Jerusalem. (**John 2:13**)
- Now the Passover, the festival of the Jews, was near. (**John 6:4**)

See Also PURIM

· Time Of His Death

- The death of **Jesus** Christ took place in the spring, on the Passover Day, **Nisan or Abib 14**, according to the Jewish calendar.
- You know that two days from now the Passover occurs, and the Son of man is to be delivered up to be impaled. (**Matthew 26:2**)

- **Now, because he knew before the festival of the Passover that his hour had come for him to move out of this world to the Father, **Jesus**, having loved his own that were in the world, loved them to the end. (John 13:1)**
- **So, while the evening meal was going on, the Devil having already put it into the heart of Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon, to betray him. (John 13:2)**
- **He, knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands and that he came forth from God and was going to God. (John 13:3)**
- **Yehowah now said to Moses and Aaron in the land of Egypt. (Exodus 12:1)**
- **This month will be the start of the months for you. It will be the first of the months of the year for you. (Exodus 12:2)**
- **Speak to the entire assembly of Israel, saying; On the tenth day of this month they are to take for themselves each one a sheep for the ancestral house, a sheep to a house. (Exodus 12:3)**
- **But if the household proves to be too small for the sheep, then he and his neighbor close by must take it into his house according to the number of souls. You should compute each one proportionate to his eating as regards the sheep. (Exodus 12:4)**
- **The sheep should prove to be sound, a male, a year old, for you. You may pick from the young rams or from the goats. (Exodus 12:5)**
- **And it must continue under safeguard by you until the fourteenth day of this month, and the whole congregation of the assembly of Israel must slaughter it between the two evenings. (Exodus 12:6)**
- **Today you are going out in the month of Abib. (Exodus 13:4)**
- **That year the Passover occurred on the sixth day of the week, counted by the Jews as from sundown on Thursday to sundown on Friday. This is evident from;**

- Then the Jews, since it was Preparation, in order, that the bodies might not remain upon the torture stakes on the Sabbath, for the day of that Sabbath was a great one, requested Pilate to have their legs broken and the bodies taken away. (**John 19:31**)
- Which shows that the following day was a great Sabbath. The day after Passover was always a Sabbath, no matter on what day of the week it came.
- In the first month, on the fourteenth day of the month, between the two evenings is the Passover to Yehowah. (**Leviticus 23:5**)
- And on the fifteenth day of this month is the festival of unfermented cakes to Yehowah. Seven days you should eat unfermented cakes. (**Leviticus 23:6**)
- On the first day you will have a holy convention occur. No sort of laborious work may you do. (**Leviticus 23:7**)
- But when this special Sabbath coincided with the regular Sabbath, the seventh day of the week, it became a great one. So **Jesus** death took place on **Friday, Nisan 14, by about 3:00 p.m.**
- Now it was the day of Preparation, and the evening light of the Sabbath was approaching. (**Luke 23:54**)

•• **Summary Of Evidence**

- Summing up, then, since **Jesus** death took place in the spring month of Nisan, his ministry, which began three and a half years earlier according to
- There are seventy weeks that have been determined upon your people and upon your holy city, in order to terminate the transgression, and to finish off sin, and to make atonement for error, and to bring in righteousness for times indefinite, and to imprint a seal upon vision and prophet, and to anoint the Holy of Holies. (**Daniel 9:24**)
- And you should know and have the insight that from the going forth of the word to restore and to rebuild Jerusalem until Messiah the Leader, there will be seven weeks, also sixty-two weeks. She will return and be actually rebuilt, with a public square and moat, but in the straits of the times. (**Daniel 9:25**)

- And after the sixty-two weeks Messiah will be cut off, with nothing for himself. And the city and the holy place the people of a leader that is coming will bring to their ruin. And the end of it will be by the flood. And until the end there will be war, what is decided upon is desolations. (**Daniel 9:26**)
- And he must keep the covenant in force for the many for one week, and at the half of the week he will cause sacrifice and gift offering to cease. And upon the wing of disgusting things there will be the one causing desolation, and until an extermination, the very thing decided upon will go pouring out also upon the one lying desolate. (**Daniel 9:27**)
- Must have begun in the **fall**, about the month of Ethanim, **September-October**. John's ministry initiated in Tiberius 15th year, then, must have begun in the **spring** of the year **29 C.E.**
- John's birth therefore would be placed in the spring of the year **2 B.C.E**, **Jesus** birth would come about six months later in the fall of **2 B.C.E**, his ministry would start about 30 years later in the fall of **29 C.E**, and his death would come in the year **33 C.E.** on **Nisan 14** in the spring, as stated.

•• No Basis For Winter Date Of Birth

- The popular date of **December 25** as the day of **Jesus** birth therefore has no basis in Scripture. As many reference works show, it stems from a pagan holiday. Regarding the origin for the celebration of the day **December 25**, the Jesuit scholar Urbanus Holzmeister wrote.
- Today it is commonly admitted that the occasion for the celebration of the day **December 25** was the festival that the pagans were celebrating on this day. [**Petavius French Jesuit scholar**], **1583-1652 C.E.** already has rightly observed that on **December 25** was celebrated the birthday of the unconquered sun.
- Witnesses for this festival are: (a) The Calendar of **Furius Dionysius Filocalus**, composed in the year **354 C.E**, in which it is noted: **December 25**, the Birthday) of the unconquered (Sun). (b) The calendar of astrologer **Antiochus** (composed about **200 C.E.** Month of **December 25th** The birthday of the Sun, daylight increases. (c) **Caesar Julian**, **Julian the Apostate**, emperor **361-363 C.E.**

- **Recommended the games that were celebrated at the end of the year in honor of the sun, which was called the unconquered sun.**

[*Chronologia vitae Christi Chronology of the Life of Christ*], Pontificium Institutum Biblicum, Rome, 1933, p. 46]

- **Perhaps the most obvious evidence of the incorrectness of the **December 25** date is the Scriptural fact that shepherds were in the fields tending their flocks on the night of **Jesus** birth.**

- **Already by the autumn month of Bul, **October-November** the rainy season was starting**

- **I also shall certainly give rain for your land at its appointed time, autumn rain and spring rain, and you will indeed gather your grain and your sweet wine and your oil. (**Deuteronomy 11:14**)**

- **And flocks were brought into protected shelters at night. The next month, Chisleb, the ninth month of the Jewish calendar, **November-December**, was a month of cold and rain**

- **And the king was sitting in the winter house, in the ninth month, with a brazier burning before him. (**Jeremiah 36:22**)**

- **So all the men of Judah and Benjamin collected themselves together at Jerusalem within three days, that is, in the ninth month on the twentieth day of the month, and all the people kept sitting in the open place of the house of the true God, shivering because of the matter and on account of the showers of rain. (**Ezra 10:9**)**

- **However, the people are many, and it is the season of showers of rain, and it is not possible to stand outside, and the business will not take one day or two, for we have rebelled to a great extent in this matter. (**Ezra 10:13**)**

- **And Tebeth, December-January saw the lowest temperatures of the year, with occasional snows in the highlands area. The presence of shepherds in the fields at night therefore harmonizes with the evidence pointing to the early autumn month of Ethanim as the time of **Jesus** birth.**

See Also BUL

See Also CHISLEV

- Also weighing against a December date is that it would be most unlikely for the Roman emperor to choose such a wintry, rainy month as the time for his Jewish subjects, often rebellious, to travel each one to his own city to be registered.
- Now in those days a decree went forth from Caesar Augustus for all the inhabited earth to be registered. ([Luke 2:1](#))
- This first registration took place when Quirinius was governor of Syria. ([Luke 2:2](#))
- And all people went traveling to be registered, each one to his own city. ([Luke 2:3](#))
- Keep praying that your flight may not occur in wintertime, nor on the Sabbath day. ([Matthew 24:20](#))

See Also TEBETH.

•• Early Life

- The record of **Jesus** early life is very brief. Born in Bethlehem of Judea, King David's native city, he was taken to Nazareth in Galilee after the family returned from Egypt all of this in fulfillment of divine prophecy.
- And on gathering together all the chief priests and scribes of the people he began to inquire of them where the Christ was to be born. ([Matthew 2:4](#))
- They said to him; In Bethlehem of Judea, for this is how it has been written through the prophet. ([Matthew 2:5](#))
- And you, O Bethlehem of the land of Judah, are by no means the most insignificant city among the governor's of Judah, for out of you will come forth a governing one, who will shepherd my people, Israel. ([Matthew 2:6](#))
- So he got up and took along the young child and its mother by night and withdrew into Egypt. ([Matthew 2:14](#))
- And he stayed there until the decease of Herod, for that to be fulfilled which was spoken by Yehowah through his prophet, saying; Out of Egypt I called my son. ([Matthew 2:15](#))

- **When Herod had deceased, look! Yehowah's angel appeared in a dream to Joseph in Egypt. (Matthew 2:19)**
- **And said; Get up, take the young child and its mother and be on your way into the land of Israel, for those who were seeking the soul of the young child are dead. (Matthew 2:20)**
- **So he got up and took the young child and its mother and entered into the land of Israel. (Matthew 2:21)**
- **But hearing that Archelaus ruled as king of Judea instead of his father Herod, he became afraid to depart for there. Moreover, being given divine warning in a dream, he withdrew into the territory of Galilee. (Matthew 2:22)**
- **And came and dwelt in a city named Nazareth, that there might be fulfilled what was spoken through the prophets; He will be called a Nazarene. (Matthew 2:23)**
- **And you, O Bethlehem Ephrathah, the one too little to get to be among the thousands of Judah, from you there will come out to me the one who is to become ruler in Israel, whose origin is from early times, from the days of time indefinite. (Micah 5:2)**
- **When Israel was a boy, then I loved him, and out of Egypt I called my son. (Hosea 11:1)**
- **And there must go forth a twig out of the stump of Jesse, and out of his roots a sprout will be fruitful. (Isaiah 11:1)**
- **Look! There are days coming, is the utterance of Yehowah; and I will raise up to David a righteous sprout. And a king will certainly reign and act with discretion and execute justice and righteousness in the land. (Jeremiah 23:5)**
- **Jesus adoptive father, Joseph, was a carpenter.**
- **Is this not the carpenter's son? Is not his mother called Mary, and his brothers, James and Joseph and Simon and Judas? (Matthew 13:55)**
- **And evidently of little means.**

- **Is this not the carpenter's son? Is not his mother called Mary, and his brothers James and Joseph and Simon and Judas? (Matthew 13:55)**
- **And his sisters, are they not all with us? Where, then, did this man get all these things? (Matthew 13:56)**
- **So they began to stumble at him. But Jesus said to them; A prophet is not unhonored except in his home territory and in his own house. (Matthew 13:57)**
- **But if she cannot afford enough for a sheep, she must then take two turtledoves or two young pigeons, one for a burnt offering and one for a sin offering, and the priest must make atonement for her, and she must be clean. (Leviticus 12:8)**
- **Thus Jesus, who on his first day of human life had slept in a stable, evidently spent his childhood in quite humble circumstances. Nazareth was not historically prominent, though near to two principal trade routes. It may have been looked down upon by many Jews.**
- **But Nathanael said to him; Can anything good come out of Nazareth? Philip said to him; Come and see. (John 1:46)**

See Also NAZARETH

- **Of the first years of Jesus life nothing is known except that the young child continued growing and getting strong, being filled with wisdom, and God's favor continued upon him.**
- **And the young child continued growing and getting strong, being filled with wisdom, and God's favor continued upon him. (Luke 2:40)**
- **In course of time the family grew as four sons and some daughters were born to Joseph and Mary.**
- **And after coming into his home territory he began to teach them in their synagogue, so that they were astounded and said; Where did this man get this wisdom and these powerful works? (Matthew 13:54)**
- **Is this not the carpenter's son? Is not his mother called Mary, and his brothers James and Joseph and Simon and Judas?**

(Matthew 13:55)

- **And his sisters, are they not all with us? Where, then, did this man get all these things? (Matthew 13:56)**
- **So, Mary's firstborn son.**
- **And she gave birth to her son, the firstborn, and she bound him with cloth bands and laid him in a manger, because there was no place for them in the lodging room. (Luke 2:7)**
- **Did not grow up as an only child. This doubtless explains why his parents could begin a return journey from Jerusalem without realizing for a while that **Jesus**, their oldest child, was missing from the group.**
- **This occasion, with **Jesus** visit, as a 12-year-old, to the temple, where he engaged in a discussion with the Jewish teachers that left them amazed, is the only incident of his early life recounted in some detail.**
- ****Jesus** reply to his worried parents when they located him there shows that Jesus knew the miraculous nature of his birth and realized his Messianic future.**
- **Now his parents were accustomed to go from year to year to Jerusalem for the festival of the Passover. (Luke 2:41)**
- **And when he became twelve years old, they went up according to the custom of the festival. (Luke 2:42)**
- **And completed the days. But when they were returning, the boy **Jesus** remained behind in Jerusalem, and his parents did not notice it. (Luke 2:43)**
- **Assuming that he was in the company traveling together, they covered a day's distance and then began to hunt him up among the relatives and acquaintances. (Luke 2:44)**
- **But, not finding him, they returned to Jerusalem, making a diligent search for him. (Luke 2:45)**
- **Well, after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the teachers and listening to them and questioning them. (Luke 2:46)**

- **But all those listening to him were in constant amazement at his understanding and his answers. (Luke 2:47)**
- **Now when they saw him they were astounded, and his mother said to him; Child, why did you treat us this way? Here your father and I in mental distress have been looking for you. (Luke 2:48)**
- **But he said to them; Why did you have to go looking for me? Did you not know that I must be in the house of my Father? (Luke 2:49)**
- **However, they did not grasp the saying that he spoke to them. (Luke 2:50)**
- **And he went down with them and came to Nazareth, and he continued subject to them. Also, his mother carefully kept all these sayings in her heart. (Luke 2:51)**
- **And Jesus went on progressing in wisdom and in physical growth and in favor with God and men. (Luke 2:52)**
- **Reasonably, his mother and his adoptive father had passed on to him the information obtained through the angelic visitations as well as through the prophecies of Simeon and Anna, spoken when the first trip was made to Jerusalem 40 days after Jesus birth.**
- **But after he had thought these things over, look! Yehowah's angel appeared to him in a dream, saying; Joseph, son of David, do not be afraid to take Mary your wife home, for that which has been begotten in her is by Holy Spirit. (Matthew 1:20)**
- **She will give birth to a son, and you must call his name Jesus, for he will save his people from their sins. (Matthew 1:21)**
- **All this actually came about for that to be fulfilled which was spoken by Yehowah through his prophet, saying; (Matthew 1:22)**
- **Look! The virgin will become pregnant and will give birth to a son, and they will call his name Immanuel, which means, when translated, With Us Is God. (Matthew 1:23)**
- **Then Joseph woke up from his sleep and did as the angel of**

Yehowah had directed him, and he took his wife home. (**Matthew 1:24**)

- But he had no intercourse with her until she gave birth to a son, and he called his name **Jesus**. (**Matthew 1:25**)
- After they had withdrawn, look! Yehowah's angel appeared in a dream to Joseph, saying; Get up, take the young child and its mother and flee into Egypt, and stay there until I give you word, for Herod is about to search for the young child to destroy it. (**Matthew 2:13**)
- So he got up and took along the young child and its mother by night and withdrew into Egypt. (**Matthew 2:14**)
- When Herod had deceased, look! Yehowah's angel appeared in a dream to Joseph in Egypt. (**Matthew 2:19**)
- And said; Get up, take the young child and its mother and be on your way into the land of Israel, for those who were seeking the soul of the young child are dead. (**Matthew 2:20**)
- So he got up and took the young child and its mother and entered into the land of Israel. (**Matthew 2:21**)
- In her sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent forth from God to a city of Galilee named Nazareth. (**Luke 1:26**)
- To a virgin promised in marriage to a man named Joseph of David's house, and the name of the virgin was Mary. (**Luke 1:27**)
- And when he went in before her he said; Good day, highly favored one, Yehowah is with you. (**Luke 1:28**)
- But she was deeply disturbed at the saying and began to reason out what sort of greeting this might be. (**Luke 1:29**)
- So the angel said to her; Have no fear, Mary, for you have found favor with God. (**Luke 1:30**)
- And, look! You will conceive in your womb and give birth to a son, and you are to call his name **Jesus**. (**Luke 1:31**)
- This one will be great and will be called Son of the Most High,

and Yehowah God will give him the throne of David his father. **(Luke 1:32)**

- **And he will rule as king over the house of Jacob forever, and there will be no end of his kingdom. (Luke 1:33)**
- **But Mary said to the angel; How is this to be, since I am having no intercourse with a man? (Luke 1:34)**
- **In answer the angel said to her; Holy Spirit will come upon you, and power of the Most High will overshadow you. For that reason also what is born will be called holy, God's Son. (Luke 1:35)**
- **And, look! Elizabeth your relative has also herself conceived a son, in her old age, and this is the sixth month for her, the so-called barren woman. (Luke 1:36)**
- **Because with God no declaration will be an impossibility. (Luke 1:37)**
- **Then Mary said; Look! Yehowah's slave girl! May it take place with me according to your declaration. At that the angel departed from her. (Luke 1:38)**
- **There were also in that same country shepherds living out of doors and keeping watches in the night over their flocks. (Luke 2:8)**
- **And suddenly Yehowah's angel stood by them, and Yehowah's glory gleamed around them, and they became very fearful. (Luke 2:9)**
- **But the angel said to them; Have no fear, for, look! I am declaring to you Good News of a great joy that all the people will have. (Luke 2:10)**
- **Because there was born to you today a Savior, who is Christ the Lord, in David's city. (Luke 2:11)**
- **And this is a sign for you. You will find an infant bound in cloth bands and lying in a manger. (Luke 2:12)**
- **And suddenly there came to be with the angel a multitude of the**

heavenly army, praising God and saying; (**Luke 2:13**)

- **Glory in the heights above to God, and upon earth peace among men of goodwill. (**Luke 2:14**)**
- **So when the angels had departed from them into heaven, the shepherds began saying to one another; Let us by all means go clear to Bethlehem and see this thing that has taken place, which Yehowah has made known to us. (**Luke 2:15**)**
- **And they went with haste and found Mary as well as Joseph, and the infant lying in the manger. (**Luke 2:16**)**
- **When they saw it, they made known the saying that had been spoken to them concerning this young child. (**Luke 2:17**)**
- **And all that heard marveled over the things told them by the shepherds. (**Luke 2:18**)**
- **But Mary began to preserve all these sayings, drawing conclusions in her heart. (**Luke 2:19**)**
- **Then the shepherds went back, glorifying and praising God for all the things they heard and saw, just as these had been told them. (**Luke 2:20**)**
- **Now when eight days came to the full for circumcising him, his name was also called **Jesus**, the name called by the angel before he was conceived in the womb. (**Luke 2:21**)**
- **Also, when the days for purifying them according to the Law of Moses came to the full, they brought him up to Jerusalem to present him to Yehowah. (**Luke 2:22**)**
- **Just as it is written in Yehowah's Law; Every male opening a womb must be called holy to Yehowah. (**Luke 2:23**)**
- **And to offer sacrifice according to what is said in the Law of Yehowah; A pair of turtledoves or two young pigeons. (**Luke 2:24**)**
- **And, look! There was a man in Jerusalem named Simeon, and this man was righteous and reverent, waiting for Israel's consolation, and Holy Spirit was upon him. (**Luke 2:25**)**

- **Furthermore, it had been divinely revealed to him by the Holy Spirit that he would not see death before he had seen the Christ of Yehowah. (Luke 2:26)**
- **Under the power of the spirit he now came into the temple, and as the parents brought the young child **Jesus** in to do for it according to the customary practice of the Law. (Luke 2:27)**
- **He himself received it into his arms and blessed God and said. (Luke 2:28)**
- **Now, Sovereign Lord, you are letting your slave go free in peace according to your declaration. (Luke 2:29)**
- **Because my eyes have seen your means of saving. (Luke 2:30)**
- **That you have made ready in the sight of all the peoples. (Luke 2:31)**
- **A light for removing the veil from the nations and a glory of your people Israel. (Luke 2:32)**
- **And its father and mother continued wondering at the things being spoken about it. (Luke 2:33)**
- **Also, Simeon blessed them, but said to Mary its mother; Look! This one is laid for the fall and the rising again of many in Israel and for a sign to be talked against (Luke 2:34)**
- **Yes, a long sword will be run through the soul of you yourself, in order, that the reasonings of many hearts may be uncovered. (Luke 2:35)**
- **Now there was Anna a prophetess, Phanuel's daughter, of Asher's tribe, this woman was well along in years, and had lived with a husband for seven years from her virginity. (Luke 2:36)**
- **And she was a widow now eighty-four years old, who was never missing from the temple, rendering sacred service night and day with fastings and supplications. (Luke 2:37)**
- **And in that very hour she came near and began returning thanks to God and speaking about the child to all those waiting for**

Jerusalem's deliverance. (Luke 2:38)

- There is nothing to indicate that **Jesus** had or exercised any miraculous powers during his childhood years, as the fanciful stories recorded in certain apocryphal works, such as the so-called Gospel of Thomas, pretend. The changing of water to wine at Cana, performed during his ministry, was the beginning of his signs.
- Now on the third day a marriage feast took place in Cana of Galilee, and the mother of **Jesus** was there. (John 2:1)
- **Jesus** and his disciples were also invited to the marriage feast. (John 2:2)
- When the wine ran short the mother of **Jesus** said to him; They have no wine. (John 2:3)
- But **Jesus** said to her; What have I to do with you, woman? My hour has not yet come. (John 2:4)
- His mother said to those ministering; Whatever he tells you, do. (John 2:5)
- As it was, there were six stone water jars sitting there as required by the purification rules of the Jews, each able to hold two or three liquid measures. (John 2:6)
- **Jesus** said to them; Fill the water jars with water. And they filled them to the brim. (John 2:7)
- And he said to them; Draw some out now and take it to the director of the feast. So they took it. (John 2:8)
- When, now, the director of the feast tasted the water that had been turned into wine but did not know what its source was, although those ministering who had drawn out the water knew, the director of the feast called the bridegroom (John 2:9)
- And said to him; Every other man puts out the fine wine first, and when people are intoxicated, the inferior. You have reserved the fine wine until now. (John 2:10)
- **Jesus** performed this in Cana of Galilee as the beginning of his signs, and he made his glory manifest, and his disciples put their

faith in him. (John 2:11)

- Likewise, while among the family in Nazareth, **Jesus** evidently did not make a showy display of his wisdom and superiority as a perfect human, as is perhaps indicated by the fact that his half brothers did not exercise faith in him during his ministry as a human, as well as by the disbelief most of the population of Nazareth showed toward him.
- Now after these things **Jesus** continued walking about in Galilee, for he did not want to walk about in Judea, because the Jews were seeking to kill him. (John 7:1)
- However, the festival of the Jews, the festival of tabernacles, was near. (John 7:2)
- Therefore his brothers said to him; Pass on over from here and go into Judea, in order, that your disciples also may behold the works you do. (John 7:3)
- For nobody does anything in secret while himself seeking to be known publicly. If you do these things, manifest yourself to the world. (John 7:4)
- His brothers were, in fact, not exercising faith in him. (John 7:5)
- And he departed from there and came into his home territory, and his disciples followed him. (Mark 6:1)
- But Jesus went on to say to them; A prophet is not unhonored except in his home territory and among his relatives and in his own house. (Mark 6:4)
- So he was able to do no powerful work there except to lay his hands upon a few sickly ones and cure them. (Mark 6:5)
- Indeed, he wondered at their lack of faith. And he went round about to the villages in a circuit, teaching. (Mark 6:6)
- Yet **Jesus** was evidently well known by the people of Nazareth.
- And after coming into his home territory he began to teach them in their synagogue, so that they were astounded and said; Where did this man get this wisdom and these powerful works?

(Matthew 13:54)

- **Is this not the carpenter's son? Is not his mother called Mary, and his brothers James and Joseph and Simon and Judas? (Matthew 13:55)**
- **And his sisters, are they not all with us? Where, then, did this man get all these things? (Matthew 13:56)**
- **And they all began to give favorable witness about him and to marvel at the winsome words proceeding out of his mouth, and they were saying; This is a son of Joseph, is it not? (Luke 4:22)**
- **his splendid qualities and personality must certainly have been noted, at least by those appreciative of righteousness and goodness.**
- **Then Jesus came from Galilee to the Jordan to John, in order to be baptized by him. (Matthew 3:13)**
- **But the latter tried to prevent him, saying; I am the one needing to be baptized by you, and are you coming to me? (Matthew 3:14)**
- **He regularly attended the synagogue services each Sabbath. He was educated, as is shown by his ability to find and read sections from the Sacred Writings, but he did not attend the rabbinic schools of higher learning.**
- **And he came to Nazareth, where he had been reared, and, according to his custom on the Sabbath day, he entered into the synagogue, and he stood up to read. (Luke 4:16)**
- **When by now the festival was half over, Jesus went up into the temple and began teaching. (John 7:14)**
- **Therefore the Jews fell to wondering, saying; How does this man have a knowledge of letters, when he has not studied at the schools? (John 7:15)**
- **Jesus, in turn, answered them and said; What I teach is not mine, but belongs to him that sent me. (John 7:16)**
- **The brevity of the record concerning these early years is because Jesus had not yet been anointed by Yehowah as the Christ.**

- In answer Simon Peter said; You are the Christ, the Son of the living God. (**Matthew 16:16**)
- And had not commenced carrying out the divine assignment awaiting him. His childhood and the growing-up process, like his birth, were necessary, though incidental, means to an end. As **Jesus** later stated to Roman Governor Pilate;
- Therefore Pilate said to him; Well, then, are you a king? **Jesus** answered; You yourself are saying that I am a king. For this I have been born, and for this I have come into the world, that I should bear witness to the truth. Everyone that is on the side of the truth listens to my voice. (**John 18:37**)

•• His Baptism

- The outpouring of Holy Spirit at the time of **Jesus** baptism marked the time of his becoming in actual fact the Messiah, or Christ, God's Anointed One, the use of this title by angels when announcing his birth evidently being in a prophetic sense.
- And suddenly Yehowah's angel stood by them, and Yehowah's glory gleamed around them, and they became very fearful. (**Luke 2:9**)
- But the angel said to them; Have no fear, for, look! I am declaring to you Good News of a great joy that all the people will have. (**Luke 2:10**)
- Because there was born to you today a Savior, who is Christ the Lord, in David's city. (**Luke 2:11**)
- And, look! There was a man in Jerusalem named Simeon, and this man was righteous and reverent, waiting for Israel's consolation, and Holy Spirit was upon him. (**Luke 2:25**)
- Furthermore, it had been divinely revealed to him by the Holy Spirit that he would not see death before he had seen the Christ of Yehowah. (**Luke 2:26**)
- For six months John had been preparing the way for the saving means of God.

- In the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Caesar, when Pontius Pilate was governor of Judea, and Herod was district ruler of Galilee, but Philip his brother was district ruler of the country of Ituraea and Trachonitis, and Lysanias was district ruler of Abilene. (Luke 3:1)
- In the days of chief priest Annas and of Caiaphas, God's declaration came to John the son of Zechariah in the wilderness. (Luke 3:2)
- So he came into all the country around the Jordan, preaching baptism in symbol of repentance for forgiveness of sins. (Luke 3:3)
- Just as it is written in the book of the words of Isaiah the prophet; Listen! Someone is crying out in the wilderness; Prepare the way of Yehowah, you people, make his roads straight. (Luke 3:4)
- Every gully must be filled up, and every mountain and hill leveled down, and the curves must become straight ways and the rough places smooth ways. (Luke 3:5)
- And all flesh will see the saving means of God. (Luke 3:6)
- **Jesus**, now about thirty years old, was baptized over John's initial objections, voiced because John till then had been baptizing only repentant sinners.
- In those days John the Baptist came preaching in the wilderness of Judea. (Matthew 3:1)
- Then **Jesus** came from Galilee to the Jordan to John, in order to be baptized by him. (Matthew 3:13)
- But the latter tried to prevent him, saying; I am the one needing to be baptized by you, and are you coming to me? (Matthew 3:14)
- In reply **Jesus** said to him; Let it be, this time, for in that way it is suitable for us to carry out all that is righteous. Then he quit preventing him. (Matthew 3:15)
- After being baptized **Jesus** immediately came up from the water,

- and, look! The heavens were opened up, and he saw descending like a dove God's spirit coming upon him. ([Matthew 3:16](#))
- Look! Also, there was a voice from the heavens that said; This is my Son, the beloved, whom I have approved. ([Matthew 3:17](#))
 - Now when all the people were baptized, **Jesus** also was baptized and, as he was praying, the heaven was opened up. ([Luke 3:21](#))
 - And the Holy Spirit in bodily shape like a dove came down upon him, and a voice came out of heaven; You are my Son, the beloved. I have approved you. ([Luke 3:22](#))
 - Furthermore, **Jesus** himself, when he commenced his work, was about thirty years old, being the son, as the opinion was, of Joseph, son of Heli. ([Luke 3:23](#))
 - **Jesus**, however, was sinless, hence his baptism testified instead to his presenting himself to do his Father's will.
 - Hence when he comes into the world he says; Sacrifice and offering you did not want, but you prepared a body for me. ([Hebrews 10:5](#))
 - You did not approve of whole burnt offerings and sin offering. ([Hebrews 10:6](#))
 - Then I said; Look! I am come, in the roll of the book it is written about me to do your will, O God. ([Hebrews 10:7](#))
 - After first saying; You did not want nor did you approve of sacrifices and offerings and whole burnt offerings and sin offering, sacrifices that are offered according to the Law. ([Hebrews 10:8](#))
 - Then he actually says; Look! I am come to do your will. He does away with what is first that he may establish what is second. ([Hebrews 10:9](#))
 - After **Jesus** had come up from the water, and while he was praying, he saw the heavens being parted, God's spirit descended upon Jesus in bodily shape like a dove, and Yehowah's voice was heard from heaven, saying; You are my Son, the beloved. I have approved you.

- After being baptized **Jesus** immediately came up from the water, and, look! The heavens were opened up, and he saw descending like a dove God's spirit coming upon him. (**Matthew 3:16**)
- Look! Also, There was a voice from the heavens that said; This is my Son, the beloved, whom I have approved. (**Matthew 3:17**)
- In the course of those days **Jesus** came from Nazareth of Galilee and was baptized in the Jordan by John. (**Mark 1:9**)
- And immediately on coming up out of the water he saw the heavens being parted, and, like a dove, the spirit coming down upon him. (**Mark 1:10**)
- And a voice came out of the heavens; You are my Son, the beloved. I have approved you. (**Mark 1:11**)
- Now when all the people were baptized, **Jesus** also was baptized and, as he was praying, the heaven was opened up. (**Luke 3:21**)
- And the Holy Spirit in bodily shape like a dove came down upon him, and a voice came out of heaven; You are my Son, the beloved. I have approved you. (**Luke 3:22**)
- God's spirit poured out upon **Jesus** doubtless illuminated his mind on many points. His own expressions thereafter, and particularly the intimate prayer to his Father on Passover night, **33 C.E.**, show that **Jesus** recalled his pre-human existence and the things he had heard from his Father and the things he had seen his Father do, as well as the glory that he himself had enjoyed in the heavens.
- Not that any man has seen the Father, except he who is from God, this one has seen the Father. (**John 6:46**)
- Therefore **Jesus** cried out as he was teaching in the temple and said; You both know me and know where I am from. Also, I have not come of my own initiative, but he that sent me is real, and you do not know him. (**John 7:28**)
- I know him, because I am a representative from him, and that One sent me forth. (**John 7:29**)
- I have many things to speak concerning you and to pass judgment upon. As a matter of fact, he that sent me is true, and

the very things I heard from him I am speaking in the world.
([John 8:26](#))

- Therefore **Jesus** said; When once you have lifted up the Son of man, then you will know that I am he, and that I do nothing of my own initiative, but just as the Father taught me I speak these things. ([John 8:28](#))
- What things I have seen with my Father I speak, and you, therefore, do the things you have heard from your father. ([John 8:38](#))
- In the house of my Father there are many abodes. Otherwise, I would have told you, because I am going my way to prepare a place for you. ([John 14:2](#))
- So now you, Father, glorify me alongside yourself with the glory that I had alongside you before the world was. ([John 17:5](#))
- It may well have been that the memory of these things was restored to him at the time of his baptism and anointing.
- **Jesus** anointing with Holy Spirit appointed and commissioned him to carry out his ministry of preaching and teaching.
- And he came to Nazareth, where he had been reared, and, according to his custom on the Sabbath day, he entered into the synagogue, and he stood up to read. ([Luke 4:16](#))
- So the scroll of the prophet Isaiah was handed him, and he opened the scroll and found the place where it was written. ([Luke 4:17](#))
- Yehowah's spirit is upon me, because he anointed me to declare Good News to the poor, he sent me forth to preach a release to the captives and a recovery of sight to the blind, to send the crushed ones away with a release. ([Luke 4:18](#))
- To preach Yehowah's acceptable year. ([Luke 4:19](#))
- With that he rolled up the scroll, handed it back to the attendant and sat down, and the eyes of all in the synagogue were intently fixed upon him. ([Luke 4:20](#))

- Then he started to say to them; Today this scripture that you just heard is fulfilled. ([Luke 4:21](#))
- **And also to serve as God's Prophet.**
- In fact, Moses said; Yehowah God will raise up for you from among your brothers a prophet like me. You must listen to him according to all the things he speaks to you. ([Acts of Apostles 3:22](#))
- Indeed, any soul that does not listen to that Prophet will be completely destroyed from among the people. ([Acts of Apostles 3:23](#))
- And all the prophets, in fact, from Samuel on and those in succession, just as many as have spoken, have also plainly declared these days. ([Acts of Apostles 3:24](#))
- You are the sons of the prophets and of the covenant which God covenanted with your forefathers, saying to Abraham, And in your seed all the families of the earth will be blessed. ([Acts of Apostles 3:25](#))
- To you first God, after raising up his Servant, sent him forth to bless you by turning each one away from your wicked deeds. ([Acts of Apostles 3:26](#))
- **But, over and above this, it appointed and commissioned him as Yehowah's promised King, the heir to David's throne.**
- This one will be great and will be called Son of the Most High, and Yehowah God will give him the throne of David his father. ([Luke 1:32](#))
- And he will rule as king over the house of Jacob forever, and there will be no end of his kingdom. ([Luke 1:33](#))
- And he has raised up a horn of salvation for us in the house of David his servant. ([Luke 1:69](#))
- But with reference to the Son; God is your throne forever and ever, and the scepter of your kingdom is the scepter of uprightness. ([Hebrews 1:8](#))

- You loved righteousness, and you hated lawlessness. That is why God, your God, anointed you with the oil of exultation more than your partners. (**Hebrews 1:9**)
- And to an everlasting Kingdom. For that reason he could later tell Pharisees; The kingdom of God is in your midst.
- But on being asked by the Pharisees when the kingdom of God was coming, he answered them and said; The kingdom of God is not coming with striking observableness. (**Luke 17:20**)
- Neither will people be saying; See here! Or, There! For, look! The kingdom of God is in your midst. (**Luke 17:21**)
- Similarly, **Jesus** was anointed to act as God's High Priest, not as a descendant of Aaron, but after the likeness of King-Priest Melchizedek.
- For every High Priest taken from among men is appointed in behalf of men over the things pertaining to God, that he may offer gifts and sacrifices for sins. (**Hebrews 5:1**)
- Also, a man takes this honor, not of his own accord, but only when he is called by God, just as Aaron also was. (**Hebrews 5:4**)
- So too the Christ did not glorify himself by becoming a High Priest, but was glorified by him who spoke with reference to him; You are my son. I, today, I have become your father. (**Hebrews 5:5**)
- Just as he says also in another place; You are a priest forever according to the manner of Melchizedek. (**Hebrews 5:6**)
- In the days of his flesh Christ offered up supplications and also petitions to the One who was able to save him out of death, with strong outcries and tears, and he was favorably heard for his godly fear. (**Hebrews 5:7**)
- Although he was a Son, he learned obedience from the things he suffered. (**Hebrews 5:8**)
- And after he had been made perfect he became responsible for everlasting salvation to all those obeying him. (**Hebrews 5:9**)
- Because he has been specifically called by God a High Priest

- according to the manner of Melchizedek. (**Hebrews 5:10**)
- **If, then, perfection were really through the Levitical priesthood, for with it as a feature the people were given the Law, what further need would there be for another priest to arise according to the manner of Melchizedek and not said to be according to the manner of Aaron? (**Hebrews 7:11**)**
 - **For since the priesthood is being changed, there comes to be of necessity a change also of the Law. (**Hebrews 7:12**)**
 - **For the man respecting whom these things are said has been a member of another tribe, from which no one has officiated at the altar. (**Hebrews 7:13**)**
 - **For it is quite plain that our Lord has sprung up out of Judah, a tribe about which Moses spoke nothing concerning priests. (**Hebrews 7:14**)**
 - **And it is still more abundantly clear that with a similarity to Melchizedek there arises another priest. (**Hebrews 7:15**)**
 - **Who has become such, not according to the Law of a commandment depending upon the flesh, but according to the power of an indestructible life. (**Hebrews 7:16**)**
 - **For in witness it is said; You are a priest forever according to the manner of Melchizedek. (**Hebrews 7:17**)**
 - **Jesus had been God's Son from the time of his birth, even as the perfect Adam had been the son of God.**
 - **Son of Enosh, son of Seth, son of Adam, son of God. (**Luke 3:38**)**
 - **In answer the angel said to her; Holy Spirit will come upon you, and power of the Most High will overshadow you. For that reason also what is born will be called holy, God's Son. (**Luke 1:35**)**
 - **The angels had identified Jesus as God's Son from his birth onward. So, when, after Jesus baptism, his Father's voice was heard saying; You are my Son, the beloved. I have approved you.**
 - **And a voice came out of the heavens; You are my Son, the**

beloved. I have approved you. (**Mark 1:11**)

- It seems reasonable that this declaration accompanying the anointing flow of God's spirit was more than just an acknowledgment of **Jesus** identity.
- The evidence is that Jesus was then begotten or brought forth by God as his spiritual Son, born again, as it were, with the right to receive life once more as a spirit Son of God in the heavens.
- In answer **Jesus** said to him; Most truly I say to you, unless anyone is born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. (**John 3:3**)
- Nicodemus said to him; How can a man be born when he is old? He cannot enter into the womb of his mother a second time and be born, can he? (**John 3:4**)
- **Jesus** answered; Most truly I say to you, unless anyone is born from water and spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. (**John 3:5**)
- What has been born from the flesh is flesh, and what has been born from the spirit is spirit. (**John 3:6**)
- I am the living bread that came down from heaven, if anyone eats of this bread he will live forever, and, for a fact, the bread that I shall give is my flesh in behalf of the life of the world. (**John 6:51**)
- This is why the Father loves me, because I surrender my soul, in order, that I may receive it again. (**John 10:17**)
- No man has taken it away from me, but I surrender it of my own initiative. I have authority to surrender it, and I have authority to receive it again. The commandment on this I received from my Father. (**John 10:18**)

See Also BAPTISM

See Also ONLY-BEGOTTEN

.. **His Vital Place In God's Purpose**

- **Yehowah God saw fit to make his firstborn Son the central, or key, figure in the outworking of all His purposes.**
- **So the Word became flesh and resided among us, and we had a view of his glory, a glory such as belongs to an only-begotten son from a father, and he was full of undeserved kindness and truth. (John 1:14)**
- **John bore witness about him, yes, he actually cried out, this was the one who said it, saying; The one coming behind me has advanced in front of me, because he existed before me. (John 1:15)**
- **For we all received from out of his fullness, even undeserved kindness upon undeserved kindness. (John 1:16)**
- **Because the Law was given through Moses, the undeserved kindness and the truth came to be through Jesus Christ. (John 1:17)**
- **No man has seen God at any time, the only-begotten god who is in the bosom position with the Father is the one that has explained him. (John 1:18)**
- **And he is the head of the body, the congregation. He is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead, that he might become the one who is first in all things. (Colossians 1:18)**
- **Because God saw good for all fullness to dwell in him. (Colossians 1:19)**
- **And through him to reconcile again to himself all other things by making peace through the blood he shed on the torture stake, no matter whether they are the things upon the earth or the things in the heavens. (Colossians 1:20)**
- **Look out! Perhaps there may be someone who will carry you off as his prey through the philosophy and empty deception according to the tradition of men, according to the elementary things of the world and not according to Christ. (Colossians 2:8)**
- **Because it is in him that all the fullness of the divine quality dwells bodily. (Colossians 2:9)**

- **The focal point on which the light of all prophecies would concentrate and from which their light would radiate.**
- **Concerning this very salvation a diligent inquiry and a careful search were made by the prophets who prophesied about the undeserved kindness meant for you. (1 Peter 1:10)**
- **They kept on investigating what particular season or what sort of season the spirit in them was indicating concerning Christ when it was bearing witness beforehand about the sufferings for Christ and about the glories to follow these. (1 Peter 1:11)**
- **It was revealed to them that, not to themselves, but to you, they were ministering the things that have now been announced to you through those who have declared the Good News to you with Holy Spirit sent forth from heaven. Into these very things angels are desiring to peer. (1 Peter 1:12)**
- **At that I fell down before his feet to worship him. But he tells me; Be careful! Do not do that! All I am is a fellow slave of you and of your brothers who have the work of witnessing to **Jesus**. Worship God, for the bearing witness to Jesus is what inspires prophesying. (Revelation 19:10)**
- **All things came into existence through him, and apart from him not even one thing came into existence. What has come into existence (John 1:3)**
- **By means of him was life, and the life was the light of men. (John 1:4)**
- **And the light is shining in the darkness, but the darkness has not overpowered it. (John 1:5)**
- **There arose a man that was sent forth as a representative of God, his name was John. (John 1:6)**
- **This man came for a witness, in order to bear witness about the light, that people of all sorts might believe through him. (John 1:7)**
- **He was not that light, but he was meant to bear witness about that light. (John 1:8)**

- The true light that gives light to every sort of man was about to come into the world. ([John 1:9](#))
- The solution to all the problems that Satan's rebellion had raised.
- For it is not to angels that he has subjected the inhabited earth to come, about which we are speaking. ([Hebrews 2:5](#))
- But a certain witness has given proof somewhere, saying; What is man that you keep him in mind, or the son of man that you take care of him? ([Hebrews 2:6](#))
- You made him a little lower than angels, with glory and honor you crowned him, and appointed him over the works of your hands. ([Hebrews 2:7](#))
- All things you subjected under his feet. For in that he subjected all things to him God left nothing that is not subject to him. Now, though, we do not yet see all things in subjection to him. ([Hebrews 2:8](#))
- But we behold **Jesus**, who has been made a little lower than angels, crowned with glory and honor for having suffered death, that he by God's undeserved kindness might taste death for every man. ([Hebrews 2:9](#))
- Therefore, since the young children are sharers of blood and flesh, he also similarly partook of the same things, that through his death he might bring to nothing the one having the means to cause death, that is, the Devil. ([Hebrews 2:14](#))
- And that he might emancipate all those who for fear of death were subject to slavery all through their lives. ([Hebrews 2:15](#))
- He who carries on sin originates with the Devil, because the Devil has been sinning from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was made manifest, namely, to break up the works of the Devil. ([1 John 3:8](#))
- And the foundation upon which God would build all future arrangements for the eternal good of His universal family in heaven and earth.
- This he caused to abound toward us in all wisdom and good

sense. (**Ephesians 1:8**)

- In that he made known to us the sacred secret of his will. It is according to his good pleasure which he purposed in himself (**Ephesians 1:9**)
- For an administration at the full limit of the appointed times, namely, to gather all things together again in the Christ, the things in the heavens and the things on the earth. Yes, in him. (**Ephesians 1:10**)
- And you have been built up upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, while Christ **Jesus** himself is the foundation cornerstone. (**Ephesians 2:20**)
- Coming to him as to a living stone, rejected, it is true, by men, but chosen, precious, with God. (**1 Peter 2:4**)
- You yourselves also as living stones are being built up a spiritual house for the purpose of a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through **Jesus** Christ. (**1 Peter 2:5**)
- For it is contained in Scripture: Look! I am laying in Zion a stone, chosen, a foundation cornerstone, precious, and no one exercising faith in it will by any means come to disappointment. (**1 Peter 2:6**)
- It is to you, therefore, that he is precious, because you are believers, but to those not believing, the identical stone that the builders rejected has become the head of the corner. (**1 Peter 2:7**)
- And, a stone of stumbling and a rock-mass of offense. These are stumbling because they are disobedient to the word. To this very end they were also appointed. (**1 Peter 2:8**)
- Because of the vital role he thus plays in God's purpose, **Jesus** could say, rightly and without exaggeration; I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me.
- **Jesus** said to him; I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me. (**John 14:6**)

•• **The Sacred Secret**

- **God's purpose as revealed in Jesus Christ remained a sacred secret, or, mystery, kept in silence for long-lasting times.**
- **Now to him who can make you firm in accord with the Good News I declare and the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the sacred secret which has been kept in silence for long-lasting times (Romans 16:25)**
- **But has now been made manifest and has been made known through the prophetic scriptures among all the nations in accord with the command of the everlasting God to promote obedience by faith. (Romans 16:26)**
- **To God, wise alone, be the glory through Jesus Christ forever. Amen. (Romans 16:27)**
- **For over 4,000 years, since the rebellion in Eden, men of faith had awaited the fulfillment of God's promise of a seed to bruise the head of the serpent-like Adversary and thereby to bring relief to mankind.**
- **And I shall put enmity between you and the woman and between your seed and her seed. He will bruise you in the head and you will bruise him in the heel. (Genesis 3:15)**
- **For nearly 2,000 years they had hoped in Yehowah's covenant with Abraham for a seed who would take possession of the gate of his enemies and by means of whom all nations of the earth would bless themselves.**
- **And Yehowah's angel proceeded to call to Abraham the second time out of the heavens. (Genesis 22:15)**
- **And to say; By myself I do swear, is the utterance of Yehowah, that by reason of the fact that you have done this thing and you have not withheld your son, your only one. (Genesis 22:16)**
- **I shall surely bless you and I shall surely multiply your seed like the stars of the heavens and like the grains of sand that are on the seashore, and your seed will take possession of the gate of his enemies. (Genesis 22:17)**
- **And by means of your seed all nations of the earth will certainly**

bless themselves due to the fact that you have listened to my voice. (**Genesis 22:18**)

- **Finally, when the full limit of the time arrived, God sent forth his Son and through him revealed the meaning of the sacred secret, gave the definitive answer to the issue raised by God's Adversary and provided the means for redeeming obedient mankind from sin and death through the ransom sacrifice of his Son.**

See Also YEHOWAH (The supreme issue a moral one)

- **But when the full limit of the time arrived, God sent forth his Son, who came to be out of a woman and who came to be under Law. (**Galatians 4:4**)**
- **Indeed, the sacred secret of this godly devotion is admittedly great. He was made manifest in flesh, was declared righteous in spirit, appeared to angels, was preached about among nations, was believed upon in the world, was received up in glory. (**1 Timothy 3:16**)**
- **I shall not speak much with you anymore, for the ruler of the world is coming. And he has no hold on me. (**John 14:30**)**
- **I have said these things to you that by means of me you may have peace. In the world you are having tribulation, but take courage! I have conquered the world. (**John 16:33**)**
- **Just as the Son of man came, not to be ministered to, but to minister and to give his soul a ransom in exchange for many. (**Matthew 20:28**)**
- **Thereby Yehowah God cleared away any uncertainty or ambiguity regarding his purposes in the minds of his servants. For that reason the apostle says that no matter how many the promises of God are, they have become Yes by means of **Jesus Christ**.**
- **For the Son of God, Christ **Jesus**, who was preached among you through us, that is, through me and Silvanus and Timothy, did not become Yes and yet No, but Yes has become Yes in his case. (**2 Corinthians 1:19**)**
- **For no matter how many the promises of God are, they have become Yes by means of him. Therefore also through him is the**

- Amen said to God for glory through us. (2 Corinthians 1:20)**
- **But he who guarantees that you and we belong to Christ and he who has anointed us is God. (2 Corinthians 1:21)**
 - **He has also put his seal upon us and has given us the token of what is to come, that is, the spirit, in our hearts. (2 Corinthians 1:22)**
 - **The sacred secret did not simply involve an identification of God's Son as such. Rather it involved the role he was assigned in the framework of God's foreordained purpose, and the revelation and execution of that purpose through **Jesus Christ**.**
 - **This purpose, so long a secret, was for an administration at the full limit of the appointed times, namely, to gather all things together again in the Christ, the things in the heavens and the things on the earth.**
 - **In that he made known to us the sacred secret of his will. It is according to his good pleasure which he purposed in himself (Ephesians 1:9)**
 - **For an administration at the full limit of the appointed times, namely, to gather all things together again in the Christ, the things in the heavens and the things on the earth. Yes, in him. (Ephesians 1:10)**
 - **The sacred secret bound up in Christ **Jesus** has as one of its aspects his heading a new heavenly government, its membership is to be formed of persons, Jews and non-Jews, taken from among earth's population, and its domain is to embrace both heaven and earth. Thus, in the vision at**
 - **I kept on beholding in the visions of the night, and, see there! With the clouds of the heavens someone like a son of man happened to be coming, and to the Ancient of Days he gained access, and they brought him up close even before that One. (Daniel 7:13)**
 - **And to him there were given rulership and dignity and kingdom, that the peoples, national groups and languages should all serve even him. His rulership is an indefinitely lasting rulership that will not pass away, and his kingdom one that will not be brought**

to ruin. ([Daniel 7:14](#))

- **One like a son of man, a title later applied frequently to Christ Jesus.**
- **For just as Jonah was in the belly of the huge fish three days and three nights, so the Son of man will be in the heart of the earth three days and three nights. ([Matthew 12:40](#))**
- **And then the sign of the Son of man will appear in heaven, and then all the tribes of the earth will beat themselves in lamentation, and they will see the Son of man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. ([Matthew 24:30](#))**
- **Moreover, just as it occurred in the days of Noah, so it will be also in the days of the Son of man. ([Luke 17:26](#))**
- **And I saw, and, look! A white cloud, and upon the cloud someone seated like a son of man, with a golden crown on his head and a sharp sickle in his hand. ([Revelation 14:14](#))**
- **Appears in Yehowah's heavenly courts and is given rulership and dignity and kingdom, that the peoples, national groups and languages should all serve even him. The same vision, however, shows that the holy ones of the Supreme One are also to share with this son of man in his Kingdom, rulership, and grandeur.**
- **And the kingdom and the rulership and the grandeur of the kingdoms under all the heavens were given to the people who are the holy ones of the Supreme One. Their kingdom is an indefinitely lasting kingdom, and all the rulerships will serve and obey even them. ([Daniel 7:27](#))**
- **While **Jesus** was on earth, he selected from among his disciples the first prospective members of his Kingdom government and, after they had stuck with him in his trials, covenanted with them for a Kingdom, praying to his Father for their sanctification, or being made holy ones, and requesting that where I am, they also may be with me, in order to behold my glory that you have given me.**
- **However, you are the ones that have stuck with me in my trials. ([Luke 22:28](#))**
- **And I make a covenant with you, just as my Father has made a**

covenant with me, for a kingdom. (**Luke 22:29**)

- So now you, Father, glorify me alongside yourself with the glory that I had alongside you before the world was. (**John 17:5**)
- Sanctify them by means of the truth, your word is truth. (**John 17:17**)
- Father, as to what you have given me, I wish that, where I am, they also may be with me, in order to behold my glory that you have given me, because you loved me before the founding of the world. (**John 17:24**)
- **Because of being thus united with Christ, the Christian congregation also plays a part in the sacred secret, as is later expressed by the inspired apostle.**
- On account of this I, Paul, the prisoner of Christ **Jesus** in behalf of you, the people of the nations. (**Ephesians 3:1**)
- If, really, you have heard about the stewardship of the undeserved kindness of God that was given me with you in view. (**Ephesians 3:2**)
- That by way of a revelation the sacred secret was made known to me, just as I wrote previously in brief. (**Ephesians 3:3**)
- In the face of this you, when you read this, can realize the comprehension I have in the sacred secret of the Christ. (**Ephesians 3:4**)
- In other generations this secret was not made known to the sons of men as it has now been revealed to his holy apostles and prophets by spirit. (**Ephesians 3:5**)
- Namely, that people of the nations should be joint heirs and fellow members of the body and partakers with us of the promise in union with Christ **Jesus** through the Good News. (**Ephesians 3:6**)
- I became a minister of this according to the free gift of the undeserved kindness of God that was given me according to the way his power operates. (**Ephesians 3:7**)

- To me, a man less than the least of all holy ones, this undeserved kindness was given, that I should declare to the nations the Good News about the unfathomable riches of the Christ. (**Ephesians 3:8**)
- And should make men see how the sacred secret is administered which has from the indefinite past been hidden in God, who created all things. (**Ephesians 3:9**)
- This was to the end that now to the governments and the authorities in the heavenly places there might be made known through the congregation the greatly diversified wisdom of God. (**Ephesians 3:10**)
- According to the eternal purpose that he formed in connection with the Christ, **Jesus** our Lord. (**Ephesians 3:11**)
- This sacred secret is great. Now I am speaking with respect to Christ and the congregation. (**Ephesians 5:32**)
- The sacred secret that was hidden from the past systems of things and from the past generations. But now it has been made manifest to his holy ones. (**Colossians 1:26**)
- To whom God has been pleased to make known what are the glorious riches of this sacred secret among the nations. It is Christ in union with you, the hope of his glory. (**Colossians 1:27**)

See Also SACRED SECRET

· Chief Agent Of Life

- As an expression of his Father's undeserved kindness, Christ **Jesus** laid down his perfect human life in sacrifice. This made possible the union of Christ's chosen followers with him in his heavenly reign and also made possible the arrangement for earthly subjects of his Kingdom rule.
- Let your kingdom come. Let your will take place, as in heaven, also upon earth. (**Matthew 6:10**)
- For God loved the world so much that he gave his only-begotten Son, in order, that everyone exercising faith in him might not be destroyed but have everlasting life. (**John 3:16**)

- **By means of him we have the release by ransom through the blood of that one, yes, the forgiveness of our trespasses, according to the riches of his undeserved kindness. (Ephesians 1:7)**
- **For it is not to angels that he has subjected the inhabited earth to come, about which we are speaking. (Hebrews 2:5)**
- **He thereby became the Chief Agent, Prince, KJ, JB of life for all mankind.**
- **Whereas you killed the Chief Agent of life. But God raised him up from the dead, of which fact we are witnesses. (Acts of Apostles 3:15)**
- **The Greek term here used means, basically, chief leader, a related word being applied to Moses.**
- **But the one that was treating his neighbor unjustly thrust him away, saying; Who appointed you ruler and judge over us? (Acts of Apostles 7:27)**
- **This Moses, whom they disowned, saying; Who appointed you ruler and judge? This man God sent off as both ruler and deliverer by the hand of the angel that appeared to him in the thornbush. (Acts of Apostles 7:35)**
- **As ruler in Israel.**

See Also RANSOM

- **Hence, as the chief leader or pioneer of Life, Mo, Jesus Christ introduced a new and essential element for gaining eternal life in the sense of being an intermediary or go-between, but he is such in an administrative sense as well.**
- **He is God's High Priest who can effect full cleansing from sin and liberation from sins death-dealing effects.**
- **Consequently, holy brothers, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the apostle and High Priest whom we confess, Jesus. (Hebrews 3:1)**

- He was faithful to the One that made him such, as Moses was also in all the house of that One. (**Hebrews 3:2**)
- Seeing, therefore, that we have a great High Priest who has passed through the heavens, **Jesus** the Son of God, let us hold onto our confessing of him. (**Hebrews 4:14**)
- Furthermore, many had to become priests in succession because of being prevented by death from continuing as such. (**Hebrews 7:23**)
- But he because of continuing alive forever has his priesthood without any successors. (**Hebrews 7:24**)
- Consequently he is able also to save completely those who are approaching God through him, because he is always alive to plead for them. (**Hebrews 7:25**)
- Now as to the things being discussed this is the main point. We have such a High Priest as this, and he has sat down at the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens. (**Hebrews 8:1**)
- A public servant of the holy place and of the true tent, which Yehowah put up, and not man. (**Hebrews 8:2**)
- For every High Priest is appointed to offer both gifts and sacrifices, wherefore it was necessary for this one also to have something to offer. (**Hebrews 8:3**)
- **He is the appointed Judge into whose hands all judgment is committed, so that he judiciously administers his ransom benefits to individuals among mankind according to their worthiness to live under his kingship.**
- For the Father judges no one at all, but he has committed all the judging to the Son. (**John 5:22**)
- In order, that all may honor the Son just as they honor the Father. He that does not honor the Son does not honor the Father who sent him. (**John 5:23**)
- Most truly I say to you, He that hears my word and believes him that sent me has everlasting life, and he does not come into judgment but has passed over from death to life. (**John 5:24**)

- **Most truly I say to you, the hour is coming, and it is now, when the dead will hear the voice of the Son of God and those who have given heed will live. (John 5:25)**
- **For just as the Father has life in himself, so he has granted also to the Son to have life in himself. (John 5:26)**
- **And he has given him authority to do judging, because Son of man he is. (John 5:27)**
- **Also, he ordered us to preach to the people and to give a thorough witness that this is the One decreed by God to be judge of the living and the dead. (Acts of Apostles 10:42)**
- **To him all the prophets bear witness, that everyone putting faith in him gets forgiveness of sins through his name. (Acts of Apostles 10:43)**
- **Through him the resurrection of the dead also comes.**
- **Do not marvel at this, because the hour is coming in which all those in the memorial tombs will hear his voice (John 5:28)**
- **And come out, those who did good things to a resurrection of life, those who practiced vile things to a resurrection of judgment. (John 5:29)**
- **This is the will of him that sent me, that I should lose nothing out of all that he has given me but that I should resurrect it at the last day. (John 6:39)**
- **For this is the will of my Father, that everyone that beholds the Son and exercises faith in him should have everlasting life, and I will resurrect him at the last day. (John 6:40)**
- **Because Yehowah God so ordained to use his Son, there is no salvation in anyone else, for there is not another name under heaven that has been given among men by which we must get saved.**
- **Furthermore, there is no salvation in anyone else, for there is not another name under heaven that has been given among men by which we must get saved. (Acts of Apostles 4:12)**

- **And this is the witness given, that God gave us everlasting life, and this life is in his Son. (1 John 5:11)**
- **He that has the Son has this life, he that does not have the Son of God does not have this life. (1 John 5:12)**
- **I write you these things that you may know that you have life everlasting, you who put your faith in the name of the Son of God. (1 John 5:13)**
- **Since this aspect of **Jesus** authority is also embraced in his name, his disciples, as representatives of the Chief Agent of life, by that name could heal persons of their infirmities resulting from inherited sin and they could even raise the dead.**
- **However, Peter said; Silver and gold I do not possess, but what I do have is what I give you; In the name of **Jesus** Christ the Nazarene, walk! (Acts of Apostles 3:6)**
- **Whereas you killed the Chief Agent of life. But God raised him up from the dead, of which fact we are witnesses. (Acts of Apostles 3:15)**
- **Consequently his name, by our faith in his name, has made this man strong whom you behold and know, and the faith that is through him has given the man this complete soundness in the sight of all of you. (Acts of Apostles 3:16)**
- **And they stood them in their midst and began to inquire; By what power or in whose name did you do this? (Acts of Apostles 4:7)**
- **Then Peter, filled with Holy Spirit, said to them; Rulers of the people and older men. (Acts of Apostles 4:8)**
- **If we are this day being examined, on the basis of a good deed to an ailing man, as to by whom this man has been made well. (Acts of Apostles 4:9)**
- **Let it be known to all of you and to all the people of Israel, that in the name of **Jesus** Christ the Nazarene, whom you impaled but whom God raised up from the dead, by this one does this man stand here sound in front of you. (Acts of Apostles 4:10)**

- **This is the stone that was treated by you builders as of no account that has become the head of the corner. (Acts of Apostles 4:11)**
- **But in Joppa there was a certain disciple named Tabitha, which, when translated, means Dorcas. She abounded in good deeds and gifts of mercy that she was rendering. (Acts of Apostles 9:36)**
- **But in those days she happened to fall sick and die. So they bathed her and laid her in an upper chamber. (Acts of Apostles 9:37)**
- **Now as Lydda was near Joppa, when the disciples heard that Peter was in this city they dispatched two men to him to entreat him; Please do not hesitate to come on as far as us. (Acts of Apostles 9:38)**
- **At that Peter rose and went with them. And when he arrived, they led him up into the upper chamber, and all the widows presented themselves to him weeping and exhibiting many inner garments and outer garments that Dorcas used to make while she was with them. (Acts of Apostles 9:39)**
- **But Peter put everybody outside and, bending his knees, he prayed, and, turning to the body, he said; Tabitha, rise! She opened her eyes and, as she caught sight of Peter, she sat up. (Acts of Apostles 9:40)**
- **Giving her his hand, he raised her up, and he called the holy ones and the widows and presented her alive. (Acts of Apostles 9:41)**
- **On the first day of the week, when we were gathered together to have a meal, Paul began discoursing to them, as he was going to depart the next day, and he prolonged his speech until midnight. (Acts of Apostles 20:7)**
- **So there were quite a few lamps in the upper chamber where we were gathered together. (Acts of Apostles 20:8)**
- **Seated at the window, a certain young man named Eutychus fell into a deep sleep while Paul kept talking on, and, collapsing in sleep, he fell down from the third story and was picked up dead. (Acts of Apostles 20:9)**

- But Paul went downstairs, threw himself upon him and embraced him and said; Stop raising a clamor, for his soul is in him. (**Acts of Apostles 20:10**)
- He now went upstairs and began the meal and took food, and after conversing for quite a while, until daybreak, he at length departed. (**Acts of Apostles 20:11**)
- So they took the boy away alive and were comforted beyond measure. (**Acts of Apostles 20:12**)

•• The Full Significance Of His Name

- It can be seen that, while **Jesus** death on a torture stake plays a vital part in human salvation, acceptance of this is by no means all that is involved in putting faith in the name of Jesus.
- To him all the prophets bear witness, that everyone putting faith in him gets forgiveness of sins through his name. (**Acts of Apostles 10:43**)
- Following his resurrection, **Jesus** informed his disciples,
- And **Jesus** approached and spoke to them, saying; All authority has been given me in heaven and on the earth. (**Matthew 28:18**)
- The apostle Paul made clear that **Jesus** Father has left nothing that is not subject to him Jesus, with the evident exception of the one who subjected all things to him, that is, Yehowah, the Sovereign God.
- For God subjected all things under his feet. But when he says that all things have been subjected, it is evident that it is with the exception of the one who subjected all things to him. (**1 Corinthians 15:27**)
- God, who long ago spoke on many occasions and in many ways to our forefathers by means of the prophets. (**Hebrews 1:1**)
- Has at the end of these days spoken to us by means of a Son, whom he appointed heir of all things, and through whom he made the systems of things. (**Hebrews 1:2**)
- He is the reflection of his glory and the exact representation of

his very being, and he sustains all things by the word of his power, and after he had made a purification for our sins he sat down on the right hand of the Majesty in lofty places. (**Hebrews 1:3**)

- So he has become better than the angels, to the extent that he has inherited a name more excellent than theirs. (**Hebrews 1:4**)
- For example, to which one of the angels did he ever say; You are my son. I, today, I have become your father? And again; I myself shall become his father, and he himself will become my son? (**Hebrews 1:5**)
- But when he again brings his Firstborn into the inhabited earth, he says; And let all God's angels do obeisance to him. (**Hebrews 1:6**)
- Also, with reference to the angels he says; And he makes his angels spirits, and his public servants a flame of fire. (**Hebrews 1:7**)
- But with reference to the Son; God is your throne forever and ever, and the scepter of your kingdom is the scepter of uprightness. (**Hebrews 1:8**)
- You loved righteousness, and you hated lawlessness. That is why God, your God, anointed you with the oil of exultation more than your partners. (**Hebrews 1:9**)
- And; You at the beginning, O Lord, laid the foundations of the earth itself, and the heavens are the works of your hands. (**Hebrews 1:10**)
- They themselves will perish, but you yourself are to remain continually, and just like an outer garment they will all grow old. (**Hebrews 1:11**)
- And you will wrap them up just as a cloak, as an outer garment, and they will be changed, but you are the same, and your years will never run out. (**Hebrews 1:12**)
- But with reference to which one of the angels has he ever said; Sit at my right hand, until I place your enemies as a stool for your feet? (**Hebrews 1:13**)

- Are they not all spirits for public service, sent forth to minister for those who are going to inherit salvation? (**Hebrews 1:14**)
- All things you subjected under his feet. For in that he subjected all things to him God left nothing that is not subject to him. Now, though, we do not yet see all things in subjection to him. (**Hebrews 2:8**)
- **Jesus** Christ's name, therefore, is more excellent than that of God's angels, in that his name embraces or stands for the vast executive authority that Yehowah has placed in him.
- He is the reflection of his glory and the exact representation of his very being, and he sustains all things by the word of his power, and after he had made a purification for our sins he sat down on the right hand of the Majesty in lofty places. (**Hebrews 1:3**)
- So he has become better than the angels, to the extent that he has inherited a name more excellent than theirs. (**Hebrews 1:4**)
- Only those who willingly recognize that name and bow to it, subjecting themselves to the authority it represents, will gain life eternal.
- Furthermore, there is no salvation in anyone else, for there is not another name under heaven that has been given among men by which we must get saved. (**Acts of Apostles 4:12**)
- And what the surpassing greatness of his power is toward us believers. It is according to the operation of the mightiness of his strength. (**Ephesians 1:19**)
- With which he has operated in the case of the Christ when he raised him up from the dead and seated him at his right hand in the heavenly places. (**Ephesians 1:20**)
- Far above every government and authority and power and lordship and every name named, not only in this system of things, but also in that to come. (**Ephesians 1:21**)
- He also subjected all things under his feet, and made him head over all things to the congregation. (**Ephesians 1:22**)

- Which is his body, the fullness of him who fills up all things in all. **(Ephesians 1:23)**
- For this very reason also God exalted him to a superior position and kindly gave him the name that is above every other name. **(Philippians 2:9)**
- So that in the name of **Jesus** every knee should bend of those in heaven and those on earth and those under the ground. **(Philippians 2:10)**
- And every tongue should openly acknowledge that **Jesus** Christ is Lord to the glory of God the Father. **(Philippians 2:11)**
- They must, sincerely and without hypocrisy, line up with the standards **Jesus** exemplified and, in faith, obey the commands he gave.
- Not everyone saying to me; Lord, Lord! Will enter into the kingdom of the heavens, but the one doing the will of my Father who is in the heavens will. **(Matthew 7:21)**
- Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name, and expel demons in your name, and perform many powerful works in your name? **(Matthew 7:22)**
- And yet then I will confess to them; I never knew you! Get away from me, you workers of lawlessness. **(Matthew 7:23)**
- Through whom we received undeserved kindness and an apostleship in order, that there might be obedience of faith among all the nations respecting his name. **(Romans 1:5)**
- Indeed, this is his commandment, that we have faith in the name of his Son **Jesus Christ** and be loving one another, just as he gave us commandment. **(1 John 3:23)**

•• Hated On Account Of His Name

- Illustrating this other aspect of **Jesus** name is his prophetic warning that his followers would be objects of hatred by all the nations on account of my name.
- Then people will deliver you up to tribulation and will kill you,

- and you will be objects of hatred by all the nations on account of my name. (**Matthew 24:9**)
- **And you will be objects of hatred by all people on account of my name, but he that has endured to the end is the one that will be saved. (**Matthew 10:22**)**
 - **Bear in mind the word I said to you, A slave is not greater than his master. If they have persecuted me, they will persecute you also, if they have observed my word, they will observe yours also. (**John 15:20**)**
 - **But they will do all these things against you on account of my name, because they do not know him that sent me. (**John 15:21**)**
 - **But the Lord said to him; Be on your way, because this man is a chosen vessel to me to bear my name to the nations as well as to kings and the sons of Israel. (**Acts of Apostles 9:15**)**
 - **For I shall show him plainly how many things he must suffer for my name. (**Acts of Apostles 9:16**)**
 - **Clearly, this would be, not because his name represented that of a Ransomer or Redeemer, but because it represented God's appointed Ruler, the King of kings, to whom all nations should bow in submission or else experience destruction.**
 - **And I saw the heaven opened, and, look! A white horse. And the one seated upon it is called Faithful and True, and he judges and carries on war in righteousness. (**Revelation 19:11**)**
 - **His eyes are a fiery flame, and upon his head are many diadems. He has a name written that no one knows but he himself. (**Revelation 19:12**)**
 - **And he is arrayed with an outer garment sprinkled with blood, and the name he is called is **The Word of God**. (**Revelation 19:13**)**
 - **Also, the armies that were in heaven were following him on white horses, and they were clothed in white, clean, fine linen. (**Revelation 19:14**)**
 - **And out of his mouth there protrudes a sharp long sword, that he may strike the nations with it, and he will shepherd them with a**

- rod of iron. He treads too the winepress of the anger of the wrath of God the Almighty. (**Revelation 19:15**)
- And upon his outer garment, even upon his thigh, he has a name written, **King of kings and Lord of lords**. (**Revelation 19:16**)
 - Let me refer to the decree of Yehowah, he has said to me; You are my son. I, today, I have become your father. (**Psalms 2:7**)
 - Ask of me, that I may give nations as your inheritance and the ends of the earth as your own possession. (**Psalms 2:8**)
 - You will break them with an iron scepter, as though a potters vessel you will dash them to pieces. (**Psalms 2:9**)
 - And now, O kings, exercise insight, let yourselves be corrected, O judges of the earth. (**Psalms 2:10**)
 - Serve Yehowah with fear and be joyful with trembling. (**Psalms 2:11**)
 - Kiss the son, that He may not become incensed and you may not perish from the way, for his anger flares up easily. Happy are all those taking refuge in him. (**Psalms 2:12**)
 - **So, too, it is certain that when demons gave in to **Jesus** command to get out of persons they possessed, they did so, not on the basis of Jesus being a sacrificial Lamb of God, but on account of the authority for which his name stood as the anointed representative of the Kingdom, the one with authority to call for, not merely one legion, but a dozen legions of angels, capable of expelling any demons who might stubbornly resist the order to leave.**
 - Well, they got to the other side of the sea into the country of the Gerasenes. (**Mark 5:1**)
 - And immediately after he got out of the boat a man under the power of an unclean spirit met him from among the memorial tombs. (**Mark 5:2**)
 - He had his haunt among the tombs, and up to that time absolutely nobody was able to bind him fast even with a chain. (**Mark 5:3**)

- Because he had oftentimes been bound with fetters and chains, but the chains were snapped apart by him and the fetters were actually smashed, and nobody had the strength to subdue him. (Mark 5:4)
- And continually, night and day, he was crying out in the tombs and in the mountains and slashing himself with stones. (Mark 5:5)
- But on catching sight of **Jesus** from a distance he ran and did obeisance to him. (Mark 5:6)
- And, when he had cried out with a loud voice, he said; What have I to do with you, **Jesus**, Son of the Most High God? I put you under oath by God not to torment me. (Mark 5:7)
- For he had been telling it; Come out of the man, you unclean spirit. (Mark 5:8)
- But he began to ask him; What is your name? And he said to him; My name is Legion, because there are many of us. (Mark 5:9)
- And he entreated him many times not to send the spirits out of the country. (Mark 5:10)
- Now a great herd of swine was there at the mountain feeding. (Mark 5:11)
- So they entreated him, saying; Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them. (Mark 5:12)
- And he permitted them. With that the unclean spirits came out and entered into the swine, and the herd rushed over the precipice into the sea, about two thousand of them, and they drowned one after another in the sea. (Mark 5:13)
- **Jesus**, now noticing that a crowd was running together upon them, rebuked the unclean spirit, saying to it; You speechless and deaf spirit, I order you, get out of him and enter into him no more. (Mark 9:25)
- And after crying out and going through many convulsions it got out, and he became as dead, so that the greater number of them

- were saying; He is dead! (**Mark 9:26**)
- But **Jesus** took him by the hand and raised him up, and he rose. (**Mark 9:27**)
 - So after he entered into a house his disciples proceeded to ask him privately; Why could we not expel it? (**Mark 9:28**)
 - And he said to them; This kind cannot get out by anything except by prayer. (**Mark 9:29**)
 - But if it is by means of God's spirit that I expel the demons, the kingdom of God has really overtaken you. (**Matthew 12:28**)
 - Or how can anyone invade the house of a strong man and seize his movable goods, unless first he binds the strong man? And then he will plunder his house. (**Matthew 12:29**)
 - Or do you think that I cannot appeal to my Father to supply me at this moment more than twelve legions of angels? (**Matthew 26:53**)
 - I also proceeded to raise my eyes and see, and here was a certain man clothed in linen, with his hips girded with gold of Uphaz. (**Daniel 10:5**)
 - And his body was like chrysolite, and his face like the appearance of lightning, and his eyes like fiery torches, and his arms and the place of his feet were like the sight of burnished copper, and the sound of his words was like the sound of a crowd. (**Daniel 10:6**)
 - And he went on to say to me; Do not be afraid, O Daniel, for from the first day that you gave your heart to understanding and humbling yourself before your God your words have been heard, and I myself have come because of your words. (**Daniel 10:12**)
 - But the prince of the royal realm of Persia was standing in opposition to me for twenty-one days, and, look! Michael, one of the foremost princes, came to help me, and I, for my part, remained there beside the kings of Persia. (**Daniel 10:13**)
 - **Jesus** faithful apostles were authorized to use his name to expel demons, both before and after his death.

- Then he called the twelve together and gave them power and authority over all the demons and to cure sicknesses. (**Luke 9:1**)
- Then the seventy returned with joy, saying; Lord, even the demons are made subject to us by the use of your name. (**Luke 10:17**)
- And it happened that as we were going to the place of prayer, a certain servant girl with a spirit, a demon of divination, met us. She used to furnish her masters with much gain by practicing the art of prediction. (**Acts of Apostles 16:16**)
- This girl kept following Paul and us and crying out with the words; These men are slaves of the Most High God, who are publishing to you the way of salvation. (**Acts of Apostles 16:17**)
- This she kept doing for many days. Finally Paul got tired of it and turned and said to the spirit; I order you in the name of **Jesus** Christ to come out of her. And it came out that very hour. (**Acts of Apostles 16:18**)
- But when the sons of Jewish priest Sceva tried to use **Jesus** name in this way, the wicked spirit challenged their right to appeal to the authority the name represented and caused the possessed man to attack and maul them.
- But certain ones of the roving Jews who practiced the casting out of demons also undertook to name the name of the Lord **Jesus** over those having the wicked spirits, saying; I solemnly charge you by Jesus whom Paul preaches. (**Acts of Apostles 19:13**)
- Now there were seven sons of a certain Sceva, a Jewish chief priest, doing this. (**Acts of Apostles 19:14**)
- But in answer the wicked spirit said to them; I know **Jesus** and I am acquainted with Paul, but who are you? (**Acts of Apostles 19:15**)
- With that the man in whom the wicked spirit was leaped upon them, got the mastery of one after the other, and prevailed against them, so that they fled naked and wounded out of that house. (**Acts of Apostles 19:16**)
- This became known to all, both the Jews and the Greeks that

- dwelt in Ephesus, and a fear fell upon them all, and the name of the Lord **Jesus** went on being magnified. (**Acts of Apostles 19:17**)
- When **Jesus** followers referred to his name they frequently employed the expression the **Lord Jesus** or **our Lord Jesus Christ**.
 - For it had not yet fallen upon any one of them, but they had only been baptized in the name of the **Lord Jesus**. (**Acts of Apostles 8:16**)
 - Men that have delivered up their souls for the name of our **Lord Jesus Christ**. (**Acts of Apostles 15:26**)
 - On hearing this, they got baptized in the name of the **Lord Jesus**. (**Acts of Apostles 19:5**)
 - But certain ones of the roving Jews who practiced the casting out of demons also undertook to name the name of the Lord **Jesus** over those having the wicked spirits, saying; I solemnly charge you by **Jesus** whom Paul preaches. (**Acts of Apostles 19:13**)
 - This became known to all, both the Jews and the Greeks that dwelt in Ephesus, and a fear fell upon them all, and the name of the **Lord Jesus** went on being magnified. (**Acts of Apostles 19:17**)
 - To the congregation of God that is in Corinth, to you who have been sanctified in union with Christ **Jesus**, called to be holy ones, together with all who everywhere are calling upon the name of our Lord, Jesus Christ, their Lord and ours. (**1 Corinthians 1:2**)
 - Now I exhort you, brothers, through the name of our Lord **Jesus Christ** that you should all speak in agreement, and that there should not be divisions among you, but that you may be fitly united in the same mind and in the same line of thought. (**1 Corinthians 1:10**)
 - In the name of our Lord **Jesus Christ** giving thanks always for all things to our God and Father. (**Ephesians 5:20**)
 - And whatever it is that you do in word or in work, do everything in the name of the **Lord Jesus**, thanking God the Father through him. (**Colossians 3:17**)

- They recognized him as their Lord not only because he was their divinely appointed Repurchaser and Owner by virtue of his ransom sacrifice.
- For you were bought with a price. By all means, glorify God in the body of you people. (**1 Corinthians 6:20**)
- For anyone in the Lord that was called when a slave is the Lord's freedman, likewise he that was called when a freeman is a slave of Christ. (**1 Corinthians 7:22**)
- You were bought with a price, stop becoming slaves of men. (**1 Corinthians 7:23**)
- For you know that it was not with corruptible things, with silver or gold, that you were delivered from your fruitless form of conduct received by tradition from your forefathers. (**1 Peter 1:18**)
- But it was with precious blood, like that of an unblemished and spotless lamb, even Christ's. (**1 Peter 1:19**)
- My reason is that certain men have slipped in who have long ago been appointed by the Scriptures to this judgment, ungodly men, turning the undeserved kindness of our God into an excuse for loose conduct and proving false to our only Owner and Lord, **Jesus Christ**. (**Jude 1:4**)
- But also because of his kingly position and authority. It was in the full regal as well as priestly authority represented by **Jesus** name that his followers preached.
- In answer Peter and the other apostles said; We must obey God as ruler rather than men. (**Acts of Apostles 5:29**)
- The God of our forefathers raised up **Jesus**, whom you slew, hanging him upon a stake. (**Acts of Apostles 5:30**)
- God exalted this one as Chief Agent and Savior to his right hand, to give repentance to Israel and forgiveness of sins. (**Acts of Apostles 5:31**)
- And we are witnesses of these matters, and so is the Holy Spirit, which God has given to those obeying him as ruler. (**Acts of**

Apostles 5:32)

- **At this they gave heed to him, and they summoned the apostles, flogged them, and ordered them to stop speaking upon the basis of **Jesus** name, and let them go. (Acts of Apostles 5:40)**
- **These, therefore, went their way from before the Sanhedrin, rejoicing because they had been counted worthy to be dishonored in behalf of his name. (Acts of Apostles 5:41)**
- **And every day in the temple and from house to house they continued without letup teaching and declaring the Good News about the Christ, **Jesus**. (Acts of Apostles 5:42)**
- **Baptized disciples.**
- **And **Jesus** approached and spoke to them, saying; All authority has been given me in heaven and on the earth. (Matthew 28:18)**
- **Go therefore and make disciples of people of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit. (Matthew 28:19)**
- **Teaching them to observe all the things I have commanded you. And, look! I am with you all the days until the conclusion of the system of things. (Matthew 28:20)**
- **Peter said to them; Repent, and let each one of you be baptized in the name of **Jesus** Christ for forgiveness of your sins, and you will receive the free gift of the Holy Spirit. (Acts of Apostles 2:38)**
- **The Christ exists divided. Paul was not impaled for you, was he? Or were you baptized in the name of Paul? (1 Corinthians 1:13)**
- **I am thankful I baptized none of you except Crispus and Gaius. (1 Corinthians 1:14)**
- **So that no one may say that you were baptized in my name. (1 Corinthians 1:15)**
- **Disfellowshipped immoral persons.**
- **That in the name of our Lord **Jesus**, when you are gathered together, also my spirit with the power of our Lord Jesus. (1**

Corinthians 5:4)

- You hand such a man over to Satan for the destruction of the flesh, in order, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord. (**1 Corinthians 5:5**)
- And exhorted and instructed the Christian congregations they shepherded.
- Now I exhort you, brothers, through the name of our Lord **Jesus** Christ that you should all speak in agreement, and that there should not be divisions among you, but that you may be fitly united in the same mind and in the same line of thought. (**1 Corinthians 1:10**)
- Now we are giving you orders, brothers, in the name of the Lord **Jesus** Christ, to withdraw from every brother walking disorderly and not according to the tradition you received from us. (**2 Thessalonians 3:6**)
- It follows, then, that those approved for life by **Jesus** could never put faith in, or render allegiance to, some other name as representing God's authority to rule, but must show unbreakable loyalty to the name of this divinely commissioned King, the Lord Jesus Christ.
- Look! My servant whom I chose, my beloved, whom my soul approved! I will put my spirit upon him, and what justice is he will make clear to the nations. (**Matthew 12:18**)
- Indeed, in his name nations will hope. (**Matthew 12:21**)
- I know where you are dwelling, that is, where the throne of Satan is, and yet you keep on holding fast my name, and you did not deny your faith in me even in the days of Antipas, my witness, the faithful one, who was killed by your side, where Satan is dwelling. (**Revelation 2:13**)
- I know your deeds, look! I have set before you an opened door, which no one can shut, that you have a little power, and you kept my word and did not prove false to my name. (**Revelation 3:8**)

See Also APPROACH TO GOD

.. Bearing Witness To The Truth

- **To Pilates question; Well, then, are you a king? **Jesus** replied;**
- **Therefore Pilate said to him; Well, then, are you a king? **Jesus** answered; You yourself are saying that I am a king. For this I have been born, and for this I have come into the world, that I should bear witness to the truth. Everyone that is on the side of the truth listens to my voice. (**John 18:37**)**
- **As the Scriptures show, the truth to which he bore witness was not just truth in general. It was the all-important truth of what God's purposes were and are, truth based on the fundamental fact of God's sovereign will and His ability to fulfill that will.**
- **By his ministry **Jesus** revealed that truth, contained in the sacred secret, as being God's Kingdom with **Jesus Christ**, the son of David, serving as King-Priest on the throne.**
- **This was also the essence of the message proclaimed by angels prior to and at the time of his birth in Bethlehem of Judea, the city of David.**
- **This one will be great and will be called Son of the Most High, and Yehowah God will give him the throne of David his father. (**Luke 1:32**)**
- **And he will rule as king over the house of Jacob forever, and there will be no end of his kingdom. (**Luke 1:33**)**
- **But the angel said to them; Have no fear, for, look! I am declaring to you Good News of a great joy that all the people will have. (**Luke 2:10**)**
- **Because there was born to you today a Savior, who is Christ the Lord, in David's city. (**Luke 2:11**)**
- **And this is a sign for you; You will find an infant bound in cloth bands and lying in a manger. (**Luke 2:12**)**
- **And suddenly there came to be with the angel a multitude of the heavenly army, praising God and saying; (**Luke 2:13**)**
- **Glory in the heights above to God, and upon earth peace among men of goodwill. (**Luke 2:14**)**

- Son of Melea, son of Menna, son of Mattatha, son of Nathan, son of David. ([Luke 3:31](#))

See Also LEGAL CASE (Jesus Trial)

- The accomplishment of his ministry in bearing witness to the truth required more of **Jesus** than merely talking, preaching, and teaching. Besides shedding his heavenly glory to be born as a human, he had to fulfill all the things prophesied about him, including the shadows, or patterns, contained in the Law covenant.
- Therefore let no man judge you in eating and drinking or in respect of a festival or of an observance of the new moon or of a Sabbath. ([Colossians 2:16](#))
- For those things are a shadow of the things to come, but the reality belongs to the **Christ**. ([Colossians 2:17](#))
- For since the Law has a shadow of the good things to come, but not the very substance of the things, men can never with the same sacrifices from year to year which they offer continually make those who approach perfect. ([Hebrews 10:1](#))
- To uphold the truth of his Father's prophetic word and promises, **Jesus** had to live in such a way as to make that truth become reality, fulfilling it by what he said and did, how he lived, and how he died. Thus, he had to **be** the truth, in effect, the embodiment of the truth, as he himself said he was.
- **Jesus** said to him; I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me. ([John 14:6](#))
- For this reason the apostle John could write that **Jesus** was full of undeserved kindness and truth and that, though the Law was given through Moses, the undeserved kindness and the truth came to be through Jesus Christ.
- So the Word became flesh and resided among us, and we had a view of his glory, a glory such as belongs to an only-begotten son from a father, and he was full of undeserved kindness and truth. ([John 1:14](#))
- Because the Law was given through Moses, the undeserved

kindness and the truth came to be through **Jesus Christ**. (**John 1:17**)

- **By means of his human birth, his presenting himself to God by baptism in water, his three and a half years of public service in behalf of God's Kingdom, his death in faithfulness to God, his resurrection to heaven by all these historical events God's truth arrived, or came to be, that is, came to realization.**
- **No man has seen God at any time, the only-begotten god who is in the bosom position with the Father is the one that has explained him. (**John 1:18**)**
- **For those things are a shadow of the things to come, but the reality belongs to the Christ. (**Colossians 2:17**)**
- **The whole career of **Jesus Christ** was therefore a bearing witness to the truth, to the things to which God had sworn. Jesus was thus no shadow Messiah or Christ.**
- **He was the **real one** promised. He was no shadow King-Priest. He was, in substance and fact, the true one that had been prefigured.**
- **For I say that Christ actually became a minister of those who are circumcised in behalf of God's truthfulness, so as to verify the promises He made to their forefathers. (**Romans 15:8**)**
- **And that the nations might glorify God for his mercy. Just as it is written: That is why I will openly acknowledge you among the nations and to your name I will make melody. (**Romans 15:9**)**
- **And again he says; Be glad, you nations, with his people. (**Romans 15:10**)**
- **And again; Praise Yehowah, all you nations, and let all the peoples praise him. (**Romans 15:11**)**
- **And again Isaiah says; There will be the root of Jesse, and there will be one arising to rule nations. On him nations will rest their hope. (**Romans 15:12**)**
- **That is why I shall laud you among the nations, O Yehowah, and to your name I will make melody. (**Psalms 18:49**)**

- Praise Yehowah, all you nations, commend him, all you clans. **(Psalms 117:1)**
- Be glad, you nations, with his people, for he will avenge the blood of his servants, and he will pay back vengeance to his adversaries and will indeed make atonement for the ground of his people. **(Deuteronomy 32:43)**
- And it must occur in that day that there will be the root of Jesse that will be standing up as a signal for the peoples. To him even the nations will turn inquiringly, and his resting-place must become glorious. **(Isaiah 11:10)**
- **This truth was the truth that would set men free if they showed themselves to be on the side of the truth by accepting Jesus role in God's purpose.**
- And you will know the truth, and the truth will set you free. **(John 8:32)**
- They replied to him; We are Abraham's offspring and never have we been slaves to anybody. How is it you say; You will become free? **(John 8:33)**
- **Jesus** answered them; Most truly I say to you, every doer of sin is a slave of sin. **(John 8:34)**
- Moreover, the slave does not remain in the household forever, the son remains forever. **(John 8:35)**
- Therefore if the Son sets you free, you will be actually free. **(John 8:36)**
- Therefore Pilate said to him; Well, then, are you a king? **Jesus** answered; You yourself are saying that I am a king. For this I have been born, and for this I have come into the world, that I should bear witness to the truth. Everyone that is on the side of the truth listens to my voice. **(John 18:37)**
- **To ignore God's purpose concerning his Son, to build hopes on any other foundation, to form conclusions regarding one's life course on any other basis would be to believe a lie, to be deceived, to follow the leading of the father of lies, God's Adversary.**

- **Therefore everyone that hears these sayings of mine and does them will be likened to a discreet man, who built his house upon the rock-mass. (Matthew 7:24)**
- **And the rain poured down and the floods came and the winds blew and lashed against that house, but it did not cave in, for it had been founded upon the rock-mass. (Matthew 7:25)**
- **Furthermore, everyone hearing these sayings of mine and not doing them will be likened to a foolish man, who built his house upon the sand. (Matthew 7:26)**
- **And the rain poured down and the floods came and the winds blew and struck against that house and it caved in, and its collapse was great. (Matthew 7:27)**
- **Jesus** said to them; **If God were your Father, you would love me, for from God I came forth and am here. Neither have I come of my own initiative at all, but that One sent me forth. (John 8:42)**
- **Why is it you do not know what I am speaking? Because you cannot listen to my word. (John 8:43)**
- **You are from your father the Devil, and you wish to do the desires of your father. That one was a manslayer when he began, and he did not stand fast in the truth, because truth is not in him. When he speaks the lie, he speaks according to his own disposition, because he is a liar and the father of the lie. (John 8:44)**
- **Because I, on the other hand, tell the truth, you do not believe me. (John 8:45)**
- **Who of you convicts me of sin? If I speak truth, why is it you do not believe me? (John 8:46)**
- **He that is from God listens to the sayings of God. This is why you do not listen, because you are not from God. (John 8:47)**
- **It would mean to die in ones sins.**
- **So he went on to say to them; You are from the realms below. I am from the realms above. You are from this world. I am not from this world. (John 8:23)**

- Therefore I said to you, you will die in your sins. For if you do not believe that I am he, you will die in your sins. (**John 8:24**)
- For this reason **Jesus** did not hold back from declaring his place in God's purpose.
- True, he instructed his disciples, even with sternness, not to broadcast his Messiahship to the public.
- Then he sternly charged the disciples not to say to anybody that he was the Christ. (**Matthew 16:20**)
- And he put the question to them; You, though, who do you say I am? In answer Peter said to him; You are the Christ. (**Mark 8:29**)
- At that he strictly charged them not to tell anyone about him. (**Mark 8:30**)
- And rarely referred to himself directly as the Christ except when in privacy with them.
- And they came into Capernaum. Now when he was inside the house he put the question to them; What were you arguing over on the road? (**Mark 9:33**)
- John said to him; Teacher, we saw a certain man expelling demons by the use of your name and we tried to prevent him, because he was not accompanying us. (**Mark 9:38**)
- For whoever gives you a cup of water to drink on the ground that you belong to Christ, I truly tell you, he will by no means lose his reward. (**Mark 9:41**)
- Then he said to them; You, though, who do you say I am? Peter said in reply; The Christ of God. (**Luke 9:20**)
- Then in a stern talk to them he instructed them not to be telling this to anybody. (**Luke 9:21**)
- This means everlasting life, their taking in knowledge of you, the only true God, and of the one whom you sent forth, **Jesus** Christ. (**John 17:3**)

- **But he boldly and regularly drew attention to the evidence in the prophecies and in his works that proved he was the Christ.**
- **Now while the Pharisees were gathered together **Jesus** asked them. (**Matthew 22:41**)**
- **What do you think about the Christ? Whose son is he? They said to him; David's. (**Matthew 22:42**)**
- **He said to them; How, then, is it that David by inspiration calls him Lord, saying; (**Matthew 22:43**)**
- **Yehowah said to my Lord; Sit at my right hand until I put your enemies beneath your feet? (**Matthew 22:44**)**
- **If, therefore, David calls him Lord, how is he his son? (**Matthew 22:45**)**
- **And nobody was able to say a word in reply to him, nor did anyone dare from that day on to question him any further. (**Matthew 22:46**)**
- **If I alone bear witness about myself, my witness is not true. (**John 5:31**)**
- **There is another that bears witness about me, and I know that the witness which he bears about me is true. (**John 5:32**)**
- **You have dispatched men to John, and he has borne witness to the truth. (**John 5:33**)**
- **However, I do not accept the witness from man, but I say these things that you may be saved. (**John 5:34**)**
- **That man was a burning and shining lamp, and you for a short time were willing to rejoice greatly in his light. (**John 5:35**)**
- **But I have the witness greater than that of John, for the very works that my Father assigned me to accomplish, the works themselves that I am doing, bear witness about me that the Father dispatched me. (**John 5:36**)**
- **Also, the Father who sent me has himself borne witness about**

- me. You have neither heard his voice at any time nor seen his figure. ([John 5:37](#))
- And you do not have his word remaining in you, because the very one whom he dispatched you do not believe. ([John 5:38](#))
 - You are searching the Scriptures, because you think that by means of them you will have everlasting life, and these are the very ones that bear witness about me. ([John 5:39](#))
 - Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father, there is one that accuses you, Moses, in whom you have put your hope. ([John 5:45](#))
 - In fact, if you believed Moses you would believe me, for that one wrote about me. ([John 5:46](#))
 - But if you do not believe the writings of that one, how will you believe my sayings? ([John 5:47](#))
 - Therefore some of the inhabitants of Jerusalem began to say; This is the man they are seeking to kill, is it not? ([John 7:25](#))
 - And yet, see! He is speaking in public, and they say nothing to him. The rulers have not come to know for a certainty that this is the Christ, have they? ([John 7:26](#))
 - On the contrary, we know where this man is from, yet when the Christ comes, no one is to know where he is from. ([John 7:27](#))
 - Therefore **Jesus** cried out as he was teaching in the temple and said; You both know me and know where I am from. Also, I have not come of my own initiative, but he that sent me is real, and you do not know him. ([John 7:28](#))
 - I know him, because I am a representative from him, and that One sent me forth. ([John 7:29](#))
 - Hence they began seeking to get hold of him, but no one laid a hand upon him, because his hour had not yet come. ([John 7:30](#))
 - Still, many of the crowd put faith in him, and they commenced saying; When the Christ arrives, he will not perform more signs than this man has performed, will he? ([John 7:31](#))

- On the occasion of talking to a Samaritan woman at a well, **Jesus**, tired out from the journey, identified himself to her, perhaps to excite curiosity among the townsfolk and draw them out from the town to him, which was the result.
- The woman said to him; I know that Messiah is coming, who is called Christ. Whenever that one arrives, he will declare all things to us openly. (**John 4:25**)
- **Jesus** said to her; I who am speaking to you am he. (**John 4:26**)
- Now at this point his disciples arrived, and they began to wonder because he was speaking with a woman. Of course, no one said; What are you looking for? Or, Why do you talk with her? (**John 4:27**)
- The woman, therefore, left her water jar and went off into the city and told the men. (**John 4:28**)
- Come here, see a man that told me all the things I did. This is not perhaps the **Christ**, is it? (**John 4:29**)
- They went out of the city and began coming to him. (**John 4:30**)
- The mere claim of Messiahship would mean nothing if not accompanied by the evidence, and in the end, faith was required on the part of those seeing and hearing if they were to accept the conclusion to which that evidence unerringly pointed.
- At length when it became day, the assembly of older men of the people, both chief priests and scribes, gathered together, and they haled him into their Sanhedrin hall, saying; (**Luke 22:66**)
- If you are the Christ, tell us. But he said to them; Even if I told you, you would not believe it at all. (**Luke 22:67**)
- Moreover, if I questioned you, you would not answer at all. (**Luke 22:68**)
- However, from now on the Son of man will be sitting at the powerful right hand of God. (**Luke 22:69**)
- At this they all said; Are you, therefore, the Son of God? He said

- to them; You yourselves are saying that I am. (**Luke 22:70**)
- They said; Why do we need further witness? For we ourselves have heard it out of his own mouth. (**Luke 22:71**)
 - Now many of the Samaritans out of that city put faith in him on account of the word of the woman who said in witness; He told me all the things I did. (**John 4:39**)
 - Therefore when the Samaritans came to him, they began asking him to stay with them, and he stayed there two days. (**John 4:40**)
 - Consequently many more believed on account of what he said; (**John 4:41**)
 - And they began to say to the woman; We do not believe any longer on account of your talk, for we have heard for ourselves and we know that this man is for a certainty the savior of the world. (**John 4:42**)
 - Therefore the Jews encircled him and began to say to him; How long are you to keep our souls in suspense? If you are the Christ, tell us outspokenly. (**John 10:24**)
 - **Jesus** answered them; I told you, and yet you do not believe. The works that I am doing in the name of my Father, these bear witness about me. (**John 10:25**)
 - But you do not believe, because you are none of my sheep. (**John 10:26**)
 - My sheep listen to my voice, and I know them, and they follow me. (**John 10:27**)
 - Therefore the crowd answered him; We heard from the Law that the Christ remains forever, and how is it you say that the Son of man must be lifted up? Who is this Son of man? (**John 12:34**)
 - **Jesus** therefore said to them; The light will be among you a little while longer. Walk while you have the light, so that darkness does not overpower you. He that walks in the darkness does not know where he is going. (**John 12:35**)
 - While you have the light, exercise faith in the light, in order to

become sons of light. **Jesus** spoke these things and went off and hid from them. (**John 12:36**)

· Tested And Perfected

- **Yehowah God demonstrated supreme confidence in his Son in charging him with the mission of going to earth and serving as the promised Messiah. God's purpose that there be a seed.**
- **And I shall put enmity between you and the woman and between your seed and her seed. He will bruise you in the head and you will bruise him in the heel. (**Genesis 3:15**)**
- **The Messiah, who would serve as the sacrificial Lamb of God, was foreknown to Him, before the founding of the world.**
- **But it was with precious blood, like that of an unblemished and spotless lamb, even Christ's. (**1 Peter 1:19**)**
- **True, he was foreknown before the founding of the world, but he was made manifest at the end of the times for the sake of you (**1 Peter 1:20**)**
- **An expression considered under the heading;**

See Also FOREKNOWLEDGE, FOREORDINATION (Foreordination of the Messiah)

- **The Bible record, however, does not state at what point Yehowah designated or informed the specific individual chosen to fill this role, whether at the time of the rebellion in Eden or at some later time.**
- **The requirements, particularly that of the ransom sacrifice, ruled out the use of any imperfect human, but not of a perfect spirit son. Out of all his millions of spirit sons, Yehowah selected one to take on the assignment, his Firstborn, the Word.**
- **For example, to which one of the angels did he ever say; You are my son. I, today, I have become your father? And again; I myself shall become his father, and he himself will become my son? (**Hebrews 1:5**)**
- **But when he again brings his Firstborn into the inhabited earth, he says; And let all God's angels do obeisance to him. (**Hebrews****

1:6)

See Also FOREKNOWLEDGE, FOREORDINATION

- **God's Son willingly accepted the assignment. This is evident from**
- **Keep this mental attitude in you that was also in Christ **Jesus**. (Philippians 2:5)**
- **Who, although he was existing in God's form, gave no consideration to a seizure, namely, that he should be equal to God. (Philippians 2:6)**
- **No, but he emptied himself and took a slaves form and came to be in the likeness of men. (Philippians 2:7)**
- **More than that, when he found himself in fashion as a man, he humbled himself and became obedient as far as death, yes, death on a torture stake. (Philippians 2:8)**
- **He emptied himself of his heavenly glory and spirit nature and took a slaves form in submitting to the transferal of his life to the earthly, material, human plane.**
- **The assignment before him represented a tremendous responsibility, so very much was involved. By remaining faithful he would prove false Satan's claim, recorded in the case of Job, that under privation, suffering, and test, God's servants would deny Him.**
- **Now it came to be the day when the sons of the true God entered to take their station before Yehowah, and even Satan proceeded to enter right among them. (Job 1:6)**
- **Then Yehowah said to Satan; Where do you come from? At that Satan answered Yehowah and said; From roving about in the earth and from walking about in it. (Job 1:7)**
- **And Yehowah went on to say to Satan; Have you set your heart upon my servant Job, that there is no one like him in the earth, a man blameless and upright, fearing God and turning aside from bad? (Job 1:8)**
- **At that Satan answered Yehowah and said; Is it for nothing that**

Job has feared God? (Job 1:9)

- **Have not you yourself put up a hedge about him and about his house and about everything that he has all around? The work of his hands you have blessed, and his livestock itself has spread abroad in the earth. (Job 1:10)**
- **But, for a change, thrust out your hand, please, and touch everything he has and see whether he will not curse you to your very face. (Job 1:11)**
- **Accordingly Yehowah said to Satan; Look! Everything that he has is in your hand. Only against him himself do not thrust out your hand! So Satan went out away from the person of Yehowah. (Job 1:12)**
- **Then Yehowah said to Satan; Just where do you come from? At that Satan answered Yehowah and said; From roving about in the earth and from walking about in it. (Job 2:2)**
- **And Yehowah went on to say to Satan; Have you set your heart upon my servant Job, that there is no one like him in the earth, a man blameless and upright, fearing God and turning aside from bad? Even yet he is holding fast his integrity, although you incite me against him to swallow him up without cause. (Job 2:3)**
- **But Satan answered Yehowah and said; Skin in behalf of skin, and everything that a man has he will give in behalf of his soul. (Job 2:4)**
- **For a change, thrust out your hand, please, and touch as far as his bone and his flesh and see whether he will not curse you to your very face. (Job 2:5)**
- **Accordingly Yehowah said to Satan; There he is in your hand! Only watch out for his soul itself! (Job 2:6)**
- **As the firstborn Son, Jesus, of all God's creatures, could give the most conclusive answer to that charge and the finest evidence in favor of his Father's side in the larger issue of the rightfulness of Yehowah's universal sovereignty. Thereby he would prove to be the Amen, the faithful and true witness.**
- **And to the angel of the congregation in Laodicea write. These**

- are the things that the Amen says, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation by God. ([Revelation 3:14](#))
- **If he failed, he would reproach his Father's name as none other could.**
 - **In selecting his only-begotten Son, Yehowah, of course, was not laying his hands hastily upon him, with the risk of being a sharer in possible sins, for **Jesus** was no novice likely to get puffed up with pride and fall into the judgment passed upon the Devil.**
 - **Never lay your hands hastily upon any man, neither be a sharer in the sins of others. Preserve yourself chaste. ([1 Timothy 5:22](#))**
 - **Not a newly converted man, for fear that he might get puffed up with pride and fall into the judgment passed upon the Devil. ([1 Timothy 3:6](#))**
 - **Yehowah fully knew his Son from his intimate association with him during countless ages past.**
 - **All things have been delivered to me by my Father, and no one fully knows the Son but the Father, neither does anyone fully know the Father but the Son and anyone to whom the Son is willing to reveal him. ([Matthew 11:27](#))**
 - **And he went on to say; Do not put out your hand against the boy and do not do anything at all to him, for now I do know that you are God-fearing in that you have not withheld your son, your only one, from me. ([Genesis 22:12](#))**
 - **You are Yehowah the true God, who chose Abram and brought him out of Ur of the Chaldeans and constituted his name Abraham. ([Nehemiah 9:7](#))**
 - **And you found his heart faithful before you, so there was a contracting of the covenant with him to give him the land of the Canaanites, the Hittites, the Amorites and the Perizzites and the Jebusites and the Girgashites, to give it to his seed, and you proceeded to carry out your words, because you are righteous. ([Nehemiah 9:8](#))**
 - **And could therefore assign him to fulfill the unerring prophecies of His Word.**

- **The One telling from the beginning to the finale, and from long ago the things that have not been done, the One saying; My own counsel will stand, and everything that is my delight I shall do. (Isaiah 46:10)**
- **The One calling from the sunrise a bird of prey, from a distant land the man to execute my counsel. I have even spoken it. I shall also bring it in. I have formed it, I shall also do it. (Isaiah 46:11)**
- **Thus God was not arbitrarily or automatically guaranteeing certain success for his Son simply by placing him in the role of the prophesied Messiah**
- **So my word that goes forth from my mouth will prove to be. It will not return to me without results, but it will certainly do that in which I have delighted, and it will have certain success in that for which I have sent it. (Isaiah 55:11)**
- **In the manner that the theory of predestinarianism claims.**
- **While the Son had never undergone a test like that now before him, he had demonstrated his faithfulness and devotion in other ways. He had already had great responsibility as God's Spokesman, the Word. Yet he never misused his position and authority, as did God's earthly spokesman Moses on one occasion.**
- **So Moses took the rod from before Yehowah, just as he had commanded him. (Numbers 20:9)**
- **After that Moses and Aaron called the congregation together before the crag, and he proceeded to say to them; Hear, now, you rebels! Is it from this crag that we shall bring out water for you? (Numbers 20:10)**
- **With that Moses lifted his hand up and struck the crag with his rod twice, and much water began to come out, and the assembly and their beasts of burden began to drink. (Numbers 20:11)**
- **Later Yehowah said to Moses and Aaron; Because you did not show faith in me to sanctify me before the eyes of the sons of Israel, therefore you will not bring this congregation into the land that I shall certainly give them. (Numbers 20:12)**

- **These are the waters of Meribah, because the sons of Israel quarreled with Yehowah, so that he was sanctified among them. (Numbers 20:13)**
- **And Yehowah proceeded to speak to Moses on this same day, saying; (Deuteronomy 32:48)**
- **Go up into this mountain of Abarim, Mount Nebo, which is in the land of Moab, which fronts toward Jericho, and see the land of Canaan, which I am giving to the sons of Israel as a possession. (Deuteronomy 32:49)**
- **Then die on the mountain into which you are going up, and be gathered to your people, just as Aaron your brother died on Mount Hor and got to be gathered to his people. (Deuteronomy 32:50)**
- **For the reason that you men acted undutifully toward me in the middle of the sons of Israel at the waters of Meribah of Kadesh in the wilderness of Zin, for the reason that you men did not sanctify me in the middle of the sons of Israel. (Deuteronomy 32:51)**
- **But when Michael the archangel had a difference with the Devil and was disputing about Moses body, he did not dare to bring a judgment against him in abusive terms, but said; May Yehowah rebuke you. (Jude 1:9)**
- **Being the One through whom all things were made, the Son was a god, the only-begotten god.**
- **No man has seen God at any time, the only-begotten god who is in the bosom position with the Father is the one that has explained him. (John 1:18)**
- **Hence held a position of glory and preeminence in relation to all others of God's spirit sons. Yet he did not become haughty.**
- **You are the anointed cherub that is covering, and I have set you. On the holy mountain of God you proved to be. In the midst of fiery stones you walked about. (Ezekiel 28:14)**
- **You were faultless in your ways from the day of your being**

- created until unrighteousness was found in you. (**Ezekiel 28:15**)
- **Because of the abundance of your sales goods they filled the midst of you with violence, and you began to sin. And I shall put you as profane out of the mountain of God, and I shall destroy you, O cherub that is covering, from the midst of the fiery stones. (**Ezekiel 28:16**)**
 - **Your heart became haughty because of your beauty. You brought your wisdom to ruin on account of your beaming splendor. Onto the earth I will throw you. Before kings I will set you, for them to look upon you. (**Ezekiel 28:17**)**
 - **So, it could not be said that the Son had not already proved his loyalty, humility, and devotion in many respects.**
 - **To illustrate, consider the test placed upon God's first human son, Adam. That test did not involve enduring persecution or suffering, but only maintaining obedient respect for God's will in regard to the tree of the knowledge of good and bad.**
 - **And Yehowah God also laid this command upon the man. From every tree of the garden you may eat to satisfaction. (**Genesis 2:16**)**
 - **But as for the tree of the knowledge of good and bad you must not eat from it, for in the day you eat from it you will positively die. (**Genesis 2:17**)**
 - **Satan's rebellion and temptation were not part of the test as originally given by God but came as an added feature, from a source foreign to God. Nor did the test, when given, call for any human temptation, as resulted to Adam from Eves deflection.**
 - **Consequently the woman saw that the tree was good for food and that it was something to be longed for to the eyes, yes, the tree was desirable to look upon. So she began taking of its fruit and eating it. Afterward she gave some also to her husband when with her and he began eating it. (**Genesis 3:6**)**
 - **And the man went on to say; The woman whom you gave to be with me, she gave me fruit from the tree and so I ate. (**Genesis 3:12**)**

- **This being so, Adam's test could have been effected without any outside temptation or influence toward wrongdoing, the whole matter resting with Adam's heart his love for God and his freedom from selfishness.**
- **More than all else that is to be guarded, safeguard your heart, for out of it are the sources of life. ([Proverbs 4:23](#))**
- **Proving faithful, Adam would have been privileged to take fruit of the tree of life and eat and live to time indefinite as a tested, approved human son of God**
- **And Yehowah God went on to say; Here the man has become like one of us in knowing good and bad, and now in order, that he may not put his hand out and actually take fruit also from the tree of life and eat and live to time indefinite. ([Genesis 3:22](#))**
- **All of this without having been subjected to vile influence and temptation, persecution, or suffering.**

See Also TREES

- **It may also be noted that the spirit son who became Satan by defecting from God's service did not do so because anyone had persecuted him or tempted him to do wrong. Certainly not God, for He does not try anyone with evil things.**
- **Yet that spirit son failed to maintain loyalty, allowed himself to be, drawn out and enticed by his own desire, and sinned, becoming a rebel.**
- **When under trial, let no one say; I am being tried by God. For with evil things God cannot be tried nor does he himself try anyone. ([James 1:13](#))**
- **But each one is tried by being drawn out and enticed by his own desire. ([James 1:14](#))**
- **Then the desire, when it has become fertile, gives birth to sin, in turn, sin, when it has been accomplished, brings forth death. ([James 1:15](#))**
- **He failed the test of love.**

- **The issue raised by God's Adversary, however, required that the Son, as the promised Messiah and future King of God's Kingdom, now undergo a test of integrity under new circumstances.**
- **This test and the sufferings it entailed were also necessary for his being made perfect for his position as God's High Priest over mankind.**
- **And after he had been made perfect he became responsible for everlasting salvation to all those obeying him. ([Hebrews 5:9](#))**
- **Because he has been specifically called by God a High Priest according to the manner of Melchizedek. ([Hebrews 5:10](#))**
- **To meet the requirements for full installation as the Chief Agent of salvation, God's Son was obliged to become like his brothers, those who became his anointed followers, in all respects, that he might become a merciful and faithful High Priest.**
- **He must endure hardships and sufferings, so that he might be able to come to the aid of those who are being put to the test, able to sympathize with their weaknesses as one who had been tested in all respects like ourselves, but without sin.**
- **Though perfect and sinless, he would still be able to deal moderately with the ignorant and erring ones. Only through such a High Priest could imperfect human's approach with freeness of speech to the throne of undeserved kindness, to obtain mercy and find undeserved kindness for help at the right time.**
- **For it was fitting for the one for whose sake all things are and through whom all things are, in bringing many sons to glory, to make the Chief Agent of their salvation perfect through sufferings. ([Hebrews 2:10](#))**
- **For both he who is sanctifying and those who are being sanctified all stem from one, and for this cause he is not ashamed to call them, brothers. ([Hebrews 2:11](#))**
- **As he says; I will declare your name to my brothers, in the middle of the congregation I will praise you with song. ([Hebrews 2:12](#))**
- **And again; I will have my trust in him. And again; Look! I and the young children, whom Yehowah gave me. ([Hebrews 2:13](#))**

- Therefore, since the young children are sharers of blood and flesh, he also similarly partook of the same things, that through his death he might bring to nothing the one having the means to cause death, that is, the Devil. (**Hebrews 2:14**)
- And that he might emancipate all those who for fear of death were subject to slavery all through their lives. (**Hebrews 2:15**)
- For he is really not assisting angels at all, but he is assisting Abraham's seed. (**Hebrews 2:16**)
- Consequently he was obliged to become like his brothers in all respects, that he might become a merciful and faithful High Priest in things pertaining to God, in order to offer propitiatory sacrifice for the sins of the people. (**Hebrews 2:17**)
- For in that he himself has suffered when being put to the test, he is able to come to the aid of those who are being put to the test. (**Hebrews 2:18**)
- For in that he himself has suffered when being put to the test, he is able to come to the aid of those who are being put to the test. (**Hebrews 2:18**)
- But said; The Son of man must undergo many sufferings and be rejected by the older men and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and on the third day be raised up. (**Luke 9:22**)

.. Still A Free Moral Agent

- **Jesus** himself said that all the prophecies concerning the Messiah were certain of realization, must be fulfilled.
- He now said to them; These are my words which I spoke to you while I was yet with you, that all the things written in the Law of Moses and in the Prophets and Psalms about me must be fulfilled. (**Luke 24:44**)
- Then he opened up their minds fully to grasp the meaning of the Scriptures. (**Luke 24:45**)
- And he said to them; In this way it is written that the Christ would suffer and rise from among the dead on the third day.

(Luke 24:46)

- **And on the basis of his name repentance for forgiveness of sins would be preached in all the nations, starting out from Jerusalem. (Luke 24:47)**
- **From that time forward **Jesus** Christ commenced showing his disciples that he must go to Jerusalem and suffer many things from the older men and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and on the third day be raised up. (Matthew 16:21)**
- **Do not think I came to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I came, not to destroy, but to fulfill. (Matthew 5:17)**
- **Yet this certainly did not relieve God's Son of the weight of responsibility, nor did it eliminate his freedom of choice either to be faithful or unfaithful.**
- **The matter was not one-sided, resting solely with the Almighty God, Yehowah. His Son must do his part to make the prophecies come true. God assured the certainty of the prophecies by his wise choice of the one to fill the assignment, the Son of his love.**
- **He delivered us from the authority of the darkness and transferred us into the kingdom of the Son of his love. (Colossians 1:13)**
- **That his Son still retained and exercised his own free will while a human on earth is clear. **Jesus** spoke of his own will, showed that he was voluntarily submitting himself to his Father's will.**
- **From that time forward **Jesus Christ** commenced showing his disciples that he must go to Jerusalem and suffer many things from the older men and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and on the third day be raised up. (Matthew 16:21)**
- **At this Peter took him aside and commenced rebuking him, saying; Be kind to yourself, Lord; You will not have this destiny at all. (Matthew 16:22)**
- **But, turning his back, he said to Peter; Get behind me, Satan! You are a stumbling block to me, because you think, not God's thoughts, but those of men. (Matthew 16:23)**

- **Jesus** said to them; My food is for me to do the will of him that sent me and to finish his work. (**John 4:34**)
- I cannot do a single thing of my own initiative, just as I hear, I judge, and the judgment that I render is righteous, because I seek, not my own will, but the will of him that sent me. (**John 5:30**)
- Because I have come down from heaven to do, not my will, but the will of him that sent me. (**John 6:38**)
- **And consciously worked toward the fulfillment of his assignment as laid out in his Fathers Word.**
- In reply **Jesus** said to him; Let it be, this time, for in that way it is suitable for us to carry out all that is righteous. Then he quit preventing him. (**Matthew 3:15**)
- Do not think I came to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I came, not to destroy, but to fulfill. (**Matthew 5:17**)
- For truly I say to you that sooner would heaven and earth pass away than for one smallest letter or one particle of a letter to pass away from the Law by any means and not all things take place. (**Matthew 5:18**)
- So the disciples came up and said to him; Why is it you speak to them by the use of illustrations? (**Matthew 13:10**)
- In reply he said; To you it is granted to understand the sacred secrets of the kingdom of the heavens, but to those people it is not granted. (**Matthew 13:11**)
- For whoever has, more will be given him and he will be made to abound, but whoever does not have, even what he has will be taken from him. (**Matthew 13:12**)
- This is why I speak to them by the use of illustrations, because, looking, they look in vain, and hearing, they hear in vain, neither do they get the sense of it. (**Matthew 13:13**)
- And toward them the prophecy of Isaiah is having fulfillment, which says, By hearing, you will hear but by no means get the sense of it, and, looking, you will look but by no means see.

(Matthew 13:14)

- For the heart of this people has grown unreceptive, and with their ears they have heard without response, and they have shut their eyes, that they might never see with their eyes and hear with their ears and get the sense of it with their hearts and turn back, and I heal them. **(Matthew 13:15)**
- However, happy are your eyes because they behold, and your ears because they hear. **(Matthew 13:16)**
- For I truly say to you, many prophets and righteous men desired to see the things you are beholding and did not see them, and to hear the things you are hearing and did not hear them. **(Matthew 13:17)**
- All these things **Jesus** spoke to the crowds by illustrations. Indeed, without an illustration he would not speak to them. **(Matthew 13:34)**
- That there might be fulfilled what was spoken through the prophet who said; I will open my mouth with illustrations, I will publish things hidden since the founding. **(Matthew 13:35)**
- Then **Jesus** said to him; Return your sword to its place, for all those who take the sword will perish by the sword. **(Matthew 26:52)**
- Or do you think that I cannot appeal to my Father to supply me at this moment more than twelve legions of angels? **(Matthew 26:53)**
- In that case, how would the Scriptures be fulfilled that it must take place this way? **(Matthew 26:54)**
- Now after John was put under arrest **Jesus** went into Galilee, preaching the Good News of God **(Mark 1:14)**
- And saying; The appointed time has been fulfilled, and the kingdom of God has drawn near. Be repentant, you people, and have faith in the Good News. **(Mark 1:15)**
- Then he started to say to them; Today this scripture that you just heard is fulfilled. **(Luke 4:21)**

- **The fulfillment of other prophetic features, of course, was not under **Jesus** control, some taking place after his death.**
- **For just as Jonah was in the belly of the huge fish three days and three nights, so the Son of man will be in the heart of the earth three days and three nights. (**Matthew 12:40**)**
- **In that hour **Jesus** said to the crowds; Have you come out with swords and clubs as against a robber to arrest me? Day after day I used to sit in the temple teaching, and yet you did not take me into custody. (**Matthew 26:55**)**
- **But all this has taken place for the scriptures of the prophets to be fulfilled. Then all the disciples abandoned him and fled. (**Matthew 26:56**)**
- **Hence Pilate said to them; Take him yourselves and judge him according to your Law. The Jews said to him; It is not lawful for us to kill anyone. (**John 18:31**)**
- **This, in order, that the word of **Jesus** might be fulfilled which he said to signify what sort of death he was destined to die. (**John 18:32**)**
- **Now when the soldiers had impaled **Jesus**, they took his outer garments and made four parts, for each soldier a part, and the inner garment. But the inner garment was without a seam, being woven from the top throughout its length. (**John 19:23**)**
- **Therefore they said to one another; Let us not tear it, but let us determine by lots over it whose it will be. This was that the scripture might be fulfilled; They apportioned my outer garments among themselves, and upon my apparel they cast lots. And so the soldiers really did these things. (**John 19:24**)**
- **In fact, these things took place in order for the scripture to be fulfilled; Not a bone of his will be crushed. (**John 19:36**)**
- **And, again, a different scripture says: They will look to the One whom they pierced. (**John 19:37**)**

- **The record of the night preceding his death strikingly reveals the intense personal effort it took on his part to subject his own will to the superior will of the One wiser than himself, his Father.**
- **Then **Jesus** came with them to the spot called Gethsemane, and he said to the disciples; Sit down here while I go over there and pray. (**Matthew 26:36**)**
- **And taking along Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, he started to be grieved and to be sorely troubled. (**Matthew 26:37**)**
- **Then he said to them; My soul is deeply grieved, even to death. Stay here and keep on the watch with me. (**Matthew 26:38**)**
- **And going a little way forward, he fell upon his face, praying and saying; My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass away from me. Yet, not as I will, but as you will. (**Matthew 26:39**)**
- **And he came to the disciples and found them sleeping, and he said to Peter; Could you men not so much as watch one hour with me? (**Matthew 26:40**)**
- **Keep on the watch and pray continually, that you may not enter into temptation. The spirit, of course, is eager, but the flesh is weak. (**Matthew 26:41**)**
- **Again, for the second time, he went off and prayed, saying; My Father, if it is not possible for this to pass away except I drink it, let your will take place. (**Matthew 26:42**)**
- **And he came again and found them sleeping, for their eyes were heavy. (**Matthew 26:43**)**
- **So leaving them, he again went off and prayed for the third time, saying once more the same word. (**Matthew 26:44**)**
- **Saying; Father, if you wish, remove this cup from me. Nevertheless, let, not my will, but yours take place. (**Luke 22:42**)**
- **Then an angel from heaven appeared to him and strengthened him. (**Luke 22:43**)**
- **But getting into an agony he continued praying more earnestly, and his sweat became as drops of blood falling to the ground.**

(Luke 22:44)

- **It also reveals that, though perfect, he keenly recognized his human dependence upon his Father, Yehowah God, for strength in time of need.**
- **But **Jesus** answered them, saying; The hour has come for the Son of man to be glorified. (**John 12:23**)**
- **Now my soul is troubled, and what shall I say? Father, save me out of this hour. Nevertheless, this is why I have come to this hour. (**John 12:27**)**
- **Father, glorify your name. Therefore a voice came out of heaven; I both glorified it and will glorify it again. (**John 12:28**)**
- **In the days of his flesh Christ offered up supplications and also petitions to the One who was able to save him out of death, with strong outcries and tears, and he was favorably heard for his godly fear. (**Hebrews 5:7**)**
- ****Jesus** therefore had much to meditate on, and to fortify himself for, during the 40 days he spent fasting, as Moses had, in the wilderness following his baptism and anointing.**
- **And he continued there with Yehowah forty days and forty nights. He ate no bread and he drank no water. And he proceeded to write upon the tablets the words of the covenant, the Ten Words. (**Exodus 34:28**)**
- **Now **Jesus**, full of Holy Spirit, turned away from the Jordan, and he was led about by the spirit in the wilderness. (**Luke 4:1**)**
- **For forty days, while being tempted by the Devil. Furthermore, he ate nothing in those days, and so, when they were concluded, he felt hungry. (**Luke 4:2**)**
- **He there had a direct encounter with the serpent-like Adversary of his Father. Using tactics similar to those in Eden, Satan the Devil tried to induce **Jesus** to display selfishness, to exalt himself, and to deny his Father's sovereign position. Unlike Adam, Jesus, the last Adam, kept integrity and, by consistently citing his Father's declared will, caused Satan to withdraw, until another convenient time.**

- Now **Jesus**, full of Holy Spirit, turned away from the Jordan, and he was led about by the spirit in the wilderness. (**Luke 4:1**)
- For forty days, while being tempted by the Devil. Furthermore, he ate nothing in those days, and so, when they were concluded, he felt hungry. (**Luke 4:2**)
- At this the Devil said to him; If you are a son of God, tell this stone to become a loaf of bread. (**Luke 4:3**)
- But **Jesus** replied to him; It is written: Man must not live by bread alone. (**Luke 4:4**)
- So he brought him up and showed him all the kingdoms of the inhabited earth in an instant of time. (**Luke 4:5**)
- And the Devil said to him; I will give you all this authority and the glory of them, because it has been delivered to me, and to whomever I wish I give it. (**Luke 4:6**)
- You, therefore, if you do an act of worship before me, it will all be yours. (**Luke 4:7**)
- In reply **Jesus** said to him; It is written: It is Yehowah your God you must worship, and it is to him alone you must render sacred service. (**Luke 4:8**)
- Now he led him into Jerusalem and stationed him upon the battlement of the temple and said to him; If you are a son of God, hurl yourself down from here. (**Luke 4:9**)
- For it is written: He will give his angels a charge concerning you, to preserve you. (**Luke 4:10**)
- And, They will carry you on their hands, that you may at no time strike your foot against a stone. (**Luke 4:11**)
- In answer **Jesus** said to him; It is said; You must not put Yehowah your God to the test. (**Luke 4:12**)
- So the Devil, having concluded all the temptation, retired from him until another convenient time. (**Luke 4:13**)
- It is even so written; The first man Adam became a living soul.

The last Adam became a life-giving spirit. (1 Corinthians 15:45)

· His Works And Personal Qualities

- Because both the undeserved kindness and the truth were to come to be through **Jesus** Christ, he had to get out among the people, let them hear him, see his works and qualities. Thus they might recognize him as the Messiah and put faith in his sacrifice when he died for them as the Lamb of God.
- Because the Law was given through Moses, the undeserved kindness and the truth came to be through **Jesus** Christ. (John 1:17)
- The next day he beheld **Jesus** coming toward him, and he said; See, the Lamb of God that takes away the sin of the world! (John 1:29)
- He personally visited Palestines many regions, covering hundreds of miles on foot. He talked to people on lakeshores and hillsides as well as in cities and villages, synagogues and temple, marketplaces, streets and houses.
- When he saw the crowds he went up into the mountain, and after he sat down his disciples came to him. (Matthew 5:1)
- And he opened his mouth and began teaching them, saying; (Matthew 5:2)
- In that hour **Jesus** said to the crowds; Have you come out with swords and clubs as against a robber to arrest me? Day after day I used to sit in the temple teaching, and yet you did not take me into custody. (Matthew 26:55)
- And when they got across to land, they came into Gennesaret and anchored ship nearby. (Mark 6:53)
- But as soon as they got out of the boat, people recognized him. (Mark 6:54)
- And they ran around all that region and started to carry about on cots those who were ailing to where they heard he was. (Mark 6:55)

- **And wherever he would enter into villages or cities or countryside they would place the sick ones in the marketplaces, and they would plead with him that they might touch just the fringe of his outer garment. And as many as did touch it were made well. (Mark 6:56)**
- **And he came to Nazareth, where he had been reared, and, according to his custom on the Sabbath day, he entered into the synagogue, and he stood up to read. (Luke 4:16)**
- **On an occasion when the crowd was pressing close upon him and listening to the word of God, he was standing beside the lake of Gennesaret. (Luke 5:1)**
- **And he saw two boats docked at the lakeside, but the fishermen had got out of them and were washing off their nets. (Luke 5:2)**
- **Going aboard one of the boats, which was Simon's, he asked him to pull away a bit from land. Then he sat down, and from the boat he began teaching the crowds. (Luke 5:3)**
- **And he journeyed through from city to city and from village to village, teaching and continuing on his journey to Jerusalem. (Luke 13:22)**
- **Then you will start saying; We ate and drank in front of you, and you taught in our broad ways. (Luke 13:26)**
- **Now when Jesus got to the place, he looked up and said to him; Zacchaeus, hurry and get down, for today I must stay in your house. (Luke 19:5)**
- **With that he hurried and got down and with rejoicing he received him as guest. (Luke 19:6)**
- **Addressing large crowds and individuals, men and women, old and young, rich and poor.**
- **But Jesus with his disciples withdrew to the sea, and a great multitude from Galilee and from Judea followed him. (Mark 3:7)**
- **Even from Jerusalem and from Idumea and from across the Jordan and around Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, on hearing of how many things he was doing, came to him. (Mark 3:8)**

- **And he again started teaching beside the sea. And a very great crowd gathered near him, so that he went aboard a boat and sat out on the sea, but all the crowd beside the sea were on the shore. (Mark 4:1)**
- **Now there was a man of the Pharisees, Nicodemus was his name, a ruler of the Jews. (John 3:1)**
- **This one came to him in the night and said to him; Rabbi, we know that you as a teacher have come from God, for no one can perform these signs that you perform unless God is with him. (John 3:2)**
- **In answer Jesus said to him; Most truly I say to you, unless anyone is born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. (John 3:3)**
- **Yet those eating were about five thousand men, besides women and young children. (Matthew 14:21)**
- **Jesus said to him; If you want to be perfect, go sell your belongings and give to the poor and you will have treasure in heaven, and come be my follower. (Matthew 19:21)**
- **When the young man heard this saying; He went away grieved, for he was holding many possessions. (Matthew 19:22)**
- **In reply Jesus said to them; Go your way and report to John what you are hearing and seeing. (Matthew 11:4)**
- **The blind are seeing again, and the lame are walking about, the lepers are being cleansed and the deaf are hearing, and the dead are being raised up, and the poor are having the Good News declared to them. (Matthew 11:5)**
- **The accompanying chart presents a suggested manner in which the four accounts of Jesus earthly life can be coordinated chronologically. It also gives an understanding of the various campaigns or tours he carried out during his ministry of three and a half years.**
- **Jesus set an example for his disciples by being hardworking, rising early, serving on into the night.**

- **So by day he would be teaching in the temple, but by night he would go out and lodge on the mountain called the Mount of Olives. (Luke 21:37)**
- **And all the people would come early in the day to him in the temple to hear him. (Luke 21:38)**
- **But when they were passing by early in the morning, they saw the fig tree already withered up from the roots. (Mark 11:20)**
- **After evening had fallen, when the sun had set, the people began bringing him all those who were ill and those demon-possessed. (Mark 1:32)**
- **And the whole city was gathered right at the door. (Mark 1:33)**
- **So he cured many that were ill with various sicknesses, and he expelled many demons, but he would not let the demons speak, because they knew him to be Christ. (Mark 1:34)**
- **This one came to him in the night and said to him; Rabbi, we know that you as a teacher have come from God, for no one can perform these signs that you perform unless God is with him. (John 3:2)**
- **But he answered them; My Father has kept working until now, and I keep working. (John 5:17)**
- **More than once he spent the night in prayer, as he did the night before giving the Sermon on the Mount.**
- **Eventually, having sent the crowds away, he went up into the mountain by himself to pray. Though it became late, he was there alone. (Matthew 14:23)**
- **By now the boat was many hundreds of yards away from land, being hard put to it by the waves, because the wind was against them. (Matthew 14:24)**
- **But in the fourth watch period of the night he came to them, walking over the sea. (Matthew 14:25)**
- **In the progress of these days he went out into the mountain to**

pray, and he continued the whole night in prayer to God. (**Luke 6:12**)

- And those that had been sent, on getting back to the house, found the slave in good health. (**Luke 7:10**)
- Another time, after serving during the night, he rose while it was still dark and headed for a lonely place to pray.
- After evening had fallen, when the sun had set, the people began bringing him all those who were ill and those demon-possessed. (**Mark 1:32**)
- And early in the morning, while it was still dark, he rose up and went outside and left for a lonely place, and there he began praying. (**Mark 1:35**)
- His privacy often interrupted by the crowds, he, nevertheless; received them kindly and began to speak to them about the kingdom of God.
- And when the apostles returned they recounted to him what things they had done. With that he took them along and withdrew to privacy into a city called Bethsaida. (**Luke 9:10**)
- But the crowds, getting to know it, followed him. And he received them kindly and began to speak to them about the kingdom of God, and he healed those needing a cure. (**Luke 9:11**)
- And he said to them; Come, you yourselves, privately into a lonely place and rest up a bit. For there were many coming and going, and they had no leisure time even to eat a meal. (**Mark 6:31**)
- So off they went in the boat for a lonely place to themselves. (**Mark 6:32**)
- But people saw them going and many got to know it, and from all the cities they ran there together on foot and got ahead of them. (**Mark 6:33**)
- Well, on getting out, he saw a great crowd, but he was moved with pity for them, because they were as sheep without a shepherd. And he started to teach them many things. (**Mark**

6:34)

- **From there he rose up and went into the regions of Tyre and Sidon. And he entered into a house and did not want anyone to get to know it. Yet he could not escape notice. (Mark 7:24)**
- **But immediately a woman whose little daughter had an unclean spirit heard about him and came and prostrated herself at his feet. (Mark 7:25)**
- **The woman was a Grecian, a Syrophenician nationally, and she kept asking him to expel the demon from her daughter. (Mark 7:26)**
- **But he began by saying to her; First let the children be satisfied, for it is not right to take the bread of the children and throw it to the little dogs. (Mark 7:27)**
- **In reply, however, she said to him; Yes, sir, and yet the little dogs underneath the table eat of the crumbs of the little children. (Mark 7:28)**
- **At that he said to her; Because of saying this, go! The demon has gone out of your daughter. (Mark 7:29)**
- **So she went away to her home and found the young child laid on the bed and the demon gone out. (Mark 7:30)**
- **He experienced tiredness, thirst, and hunger, at times forgoing food for the sake of the work to be done.**
- **While returning to the city early in the morning, he got hungry. (Matthew 21:18)**
- **In fact, Jacob's fountain was there. Now Jesus, tired out from the journey, was sitting at the fountain just as he was. The hour was about the sixth. (John 4:6)**
- **A woman of Samaria came to draw water. Jesus said to her; Give me a drink. (John 4:7)**
- **After he had fasted forty days and forty nights, then he felt hungry. (Matthew 4:2)**

- **Also, the Tempter came and said to him; If you are a son of God, tell these stones to become loaves of bread. (Matthew 4:3)**
- **But in reply he said; It is written: Man must live, not on bread alone, but on every utterance coming forth through Yehowah's mouth. (Matthew 4:4)**
- **Now, look! A great agitation arose in the sea, so that the boat was being covered by the waves, he, however, was sleeping. (Matthew 8:24)**
- **And they came and woke him up, saying; Lord, save us, we are about to perish! (Matthew 8:25)**

•• **Balanced View Of Material Things**

- **He was not, however, an ascetic, practicing self-denial to an extreme degree without regard for the circumstances at hand.**
- **Correspondingly, John the Baptist has come neither eating bread nor drinking wine, but you say; He has a demon. (Luke 7:33)**
- **The Son of man has come eating and drinking, but you say; Look! A man gluttonous and given to drinking wine, a friend of tax collectors and sinners! (Luke 7:34)**
- **He accepted many invitations to meals and even banquets, visiting the homes of persons of some wealth.**
- **Also, Levi spread a big reception feast for him in his house, and there was a great crowd of tax collectors and others who were with them reclining at the meal. (Luke 5:29)**
- **Now a certain one of the Pharisees kept asking him to dine with him. Accordingly he entered into the house of the Pharisee and reclined at the table. (Luke 7:36)**
- **And on an occasion when he went into the house of a certain one of the rulers of the Pharisees on the Sabbath to eat a meal, they were closely watching him. (Luke 14:1)**
- **And he entered Jericho and was going through. (Luke 19:1)**
- **Now here there was a man called by the name Zacchaeus, and he**

- was a chief tax collector, and he was rich. ([Luke 19:2](#))
- Well, he was seeking to see who this **Jesus** was, but he could not for the crowd, because he was small in size. ([Luke 19:3](#))
 - So he ran ahead to an advance position and climbed a fig-mulberry tree in order to see him, because he was about to go through that way. ([Luke 19:4](#))
 - Now when **Jesus** got to the place, he looked up and said to him; Zacchaeus, hurry and get down, for today I must stay in your house. ([Luke 19:5](#))
 - With that he hurried and got down and with rejoicing he received him as guest. ([Luke 19:6](#))
 - He contributed to the enjoyment at a wedding by changing water into fine wine.
 - Now on the third day a marriage feast took place in Cana of Galilee, and the mother of **Jesus** was there. ([John 2:1](#))
 - **Jesus** and his disciples were also invited to the marriage feast. ([John 2:2](#))
 - When the wine ran short the mother of **Jesus** said to him; They have no wine. ([John 2:3](#))
 - But **Jesus** said to her; What have I to do with you, woman? My hour has not yet come. ([John 2:4](#))
 - His mother said to those ministering; Whatever he tells you, do. ([John 2:5](#))
 - As it was, there were six stone water jars sitting there as required by the purification rules of the Jews, each able to hold two or three liquid measures. ([John 2:6](#))
 - **Jesus** said to them; Fill the water jars with water. And they filled them to the brim. ([John 2:7](#))
 - And he said to them; Draw some out now and take it to the director of the feast. So they took it. ([John 2:8](#))

- **When, now, the director of the feast tasted the water that had been turned into wine but did not know what its source was, although those ministering who had drawn out the water knew, the director of the feast called the bridegroom (John 2:9)**
- **And said to him; Every other man puts out the fine wine first, and when people are intoxicated, the inferior. You have reserved the fine wine until now. (John 2:10)**
- **And he appreciated good things done for him. When Judas expressed indignation at Lazarus sister Mary's use of a pound of perfumed oil, worth over \$220, or about a year's wages of a laborer, to anoint Jesus feet and professed concern for the poor who could have benefited from the sale of the oil, Jesus said,**
- **Therefore they spread an evening meal for him there, and Martha was ministering, but Lazarus was one of those reclining at the table with him. (John 12:2)**
- **Mary, therefore, took a pound of perfumed oil, genuine nard, very costly, and she greased the feet of Jesus and wiped his feet dry with her hair. The house became filled with the scent of the perfumed oil. (John 12:3)**
- **But Judas Iscariot, one of his disciples, who was about to betray him, said. (John 12:4)**
- **Why was it this perfumed oil was not sold for three hundred denarii and given to the poor people? (John 12:5)**
- **He said this, though, not because he was concerned about the poor, but because he was a thief and had the money box and used to carry off the monies put in it. (John 12:6)**
- **Therefore Jesus said; Let her alone, that she may keep this observance in view of the day of my burial. (John 12:7)**
- **For you have the poor always with you, but me you will not have always. (John 12:8)**
- **But Jesus said; Let her alone. Why do you try to make trouble for her? She did a fine deed toward me. (Mark 14:6)**
- **For you always have the poor with you, and whenever you want**

- to you can always do them good, but me you do not have always. **(Mark 14:7)**
- She did what she could. She undertook beforehand to put perfumed oil on my body in view of the burial. **(Mark 14:8)**
 - Truly I say to you, wherever the Good News is preached in all the world, what this woman did shall also be told as a remembrance of her. **(Mark 14:9)**
 - The inner garment he wore when arrested, woven from the top throughout its length, was evidently a quality garment.
 - Now when the soldiers had impaled **Jesus**, they took his outer garments and made four parts, for each soldier a part, and the inner garment. But the inner garment was without a seam, being woven from the top throughout its length. **(John 19:23)**
 - Therefore they said to one another; Let us not tear it, but let us determine by lots over it whose it will be. This was that the scripture might be fulfilled; They apportioned my outer garments among themselves, and upon my apparel they cast lots. And so the soldiers really did these things. **(John 19:24)**
 - Nevertheless, **Jesus** always gave spiritual things first place and was never overly concerned about material things, even as he counseled others.
 - No one can slave for two masters, for either he will hate the one and love the other, or he will stick to the one and despise the other. You cannot slave for God and for Riches. **(Matthew 6:24)**
 - On this account I say to you. Stop being anxious about your souls as to what you will eat or what you will drink, or about your bodies as to what you will wear. Does not the soul mean more than food and the body than clothing? **(Matthew 6:25)**
 - Observe intently the birds of heaven, because they do not sow seed or reap or gather into storehouses, still your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not worth more than they are? **(Matthew 6:26)**
 - Who of you by being anxious can add one cubit to his life span? **(Matthew 6:27)**

- **Also, on the matter of clothing, why are you anxious? Take a lesson from the lilies of the field, how they are growing, they do not toil, nor do they spin. (Matthew 6:28)**
- **But I say to you that not even Solomon in all his glory was arrayed as one of these. (Matthew 6:29)**
- **If, now, God thus clothes the vegetation of the field, which is here today and tomorrow is thrown into the oven, will he not much rather clothe you, you with little faith? (Matthew 6:30)**
- **So never be anxious and say; What are we to eat? Or; What are we to drink? Or, What are we to put on? (Matthew 6:31)**
- **For all these are the things the nations are eagerly pursuing. For your heavenly Father knows you need all these things. (Matthew 6:32)**
- **Keep on, then, seeking first the kingdom and his righteousness, and all these other things will be added to you. (Matthew 6:33)**
- **So, never be anxious about the next day, for the next day will have its own anxieties. Sufficient for each day is its own badness. (Matthew 6:34)**
- **But Jesus said to him; Foxes have dens and birds of heaven have roosts, but the Son of man has nowhere to lay down his head. (Matthew 8:20)**
- **Now as they were going their way he entered into a certain village. Here a certain woman named Martha received him as guest into the house. (Luke 10:38)**
- **This woman also had a sister called Mary, who, however, sat down at the feet of the Lord and kept listening to his word. (Luke 10:39)**
- **Martha, on the other hand, was distracted with attending to many duties. So, she came near and said; Lord, does it not matter to you that my sister has left me alone to attend to things? Tell her, therefore, to join in helping me. (Luke 10:40)**
- **In answer the Lord said to her; Martha, Martha, you are anxious**

and disturbed about many things. (**Luke 10:41**)

- A few things, though, are needed, or just one. For her part, Mary chose the good portion, and it will not be taken away from her. (**Luke 10:42**)
- I do rejoice greatly in the Lord that now at last you have revived your thinking in my behalf, to which you were really giving thought, but you lacked opportunity. (**Philippians 4:10**)
- Not that I am speaking with regard to being in want, for I have learned, in whatever circumstances I am, to be self-sufficient. (**Philippians 4:11**)
- I know indeed how to be low on provisions, I know indeed how to have an abundance. In everything and in all circumstances I have learned the secret of both how to be full and how to hunger, both how to have an abundance and how to suffer want. (**Philippians 4:12**)

·· **Courageous Liberator**

- Great courage, manliness, and strength are evident throughout his ministry.
- I, for my part, baptize you with water because of your repentance, but the one coming after me is stronger than I am, whose sandals I am not fit to take off. That one will baptize you people with Holy Spirit and with fire. (**Matthew 3:11**)
- Now all those hearing these things in the synagogue became filled with anger. (**Luke 4:28**)
- And they rose up and hurried him outside the city, and they led him to the brow of the mountain upon which their city had been built, in order to throw him down headlong. (**Luke 4:29**)
- But he went through the midst of them and continued on his way. (**Luke 4:30**)
- As the days were now coming to the full for him to be taken up, he firmly set his face to go to Jerusalem. (**Luke 9:51**)
- Now the Passover of the Jews was near, and **Jesus** went up to

Jerusalem. (**John 2:13**)

- And he found in the temple those selling cattle and sheep and doves and the money brokers in their seats. (**John 2:14**)
- So, after making a whip of ropes, he drove all those with the sheep and cattle out of the temple, and he poured out the coins of the money changers and overturned their tables. (**John 2:15**)
- And he said to those selling the doves; Take these things away from here! Stop making the house of my Father a house of merchandise! (**John 2:16**)
- His disciples called to mind that it is written: The zeal for your house will eat me up. (**John 2:17**)
- Once more the Jews lifted up stones to stone him. (**John 10:31**)
- **Jesus** replied to them; I displayed to you many fine works from the Father. For which of those works are you stoning me? (**John 10:32**)
- The Jews answered him; We are stoning you, not for a fine work, but for blasphemy, even because you, although being a man, make yourself a god. (**John 10:33**)
- **Jesus** answered them; Is it not written in your Law: I said, you are gods? (**John 10:34**)
- If he called gods those against whom the word of God came, and yet the Scripture cannot be nullified. (**John 10:35**)
- Do you say to me whom the Father sanctified and dispatched into the world, You blaspheme! Because I said; I am God's Son? (**John 10:36**)
- If I am not doing the works of my Father, do not believe me. (**John 10:37**)
- But if I am doing them, even though you do not believe me, believe the works, in order, that you may come to know and may continue knowing that the Father is in union with me and I am in union with the Father. (**John 10:38**)

- Therefore they tried again to seize him, but he got out of their reach. (**John 10:39**)
- Therefore Judas took the soldier band and officers of the chief priests and of the Pharisees and came there with torches and lamps and weapons. (**John 18:3**)
- **Jesus**, therefore, knowing all the things coming upon him, went forth and said to them; Whom are you looking for? (**John 18:4**)
- They answered him; **Jesus** the Nazarene. He said to them. I am he. Now Judas, his betrayer, was also standing with them. (**John 18:5**)
- However, when he said to them; I am he, they drew back and fell to the ground. (**John 18:6**)
- Therefore he asked them again; Whom are you looking for? They said; **Jesus** the Nazarene. (**John 18:7**)
- **Jesus** answered; I told you I am he. If, therefore, it is I you are looking for, let these go. (**John 18:8**)
- In order, that the word might be fulfilled which he said; Of those whom you have given me I have not lost a single one. (**John 18:9**)
- Then Simon Peter, as he had a sword, drew it and struck the slave of the High Priest and cut his right ear off. The name of the slave was Malchus. (**John 18:10**)
- **Jesus**, however, said to Peter; Put the sword into its sheath. The cup that the Father has given me, should I not by all means drink it? (**John 18:11**)
- Like Joshua, King David, and others, **Jesus** was a fighter for God's cause and on behalf of lovers of righteousness. As the promised seed, he had to face the enmity of the seed of the serpent, doing battle with them.
- And I shall put enmity between you and the woman and between your seed and her seed. He will bruise you in the head and you will bruise him in the heel. (**Genesis 3:15**)

- **I shall surely bless you and I shall surely multiply your seed like the stars of the heavens and like the grains of sand that are on the seashore, and your seed will take possession of the gate of his enemies. (Genesis 22:17)**
- **He waged offensive warfare against the demons and their influence on men's minds and hearts.**
- **Well, they got to the other side of the sea into the country of the Gerasenes. (Mark 5:1)**
- **And immediately after he got out of the boat a man under the power of an unclean spirit met him from among the memorial tombs. (Mark 5:2)**
- **He had his haunt among the tombs, and up to that time absolutely nobody was able to bind him fast even with a chain. (Mark 5:3)**
- **Because he had oftentimes been bound with fetters and chains, but the chains were snapped apart by him and the fetters were actually smashed, and nobody had the strength to subdue him. (Mark 5:4)**
- **And continually, night and day, he was crying out in the tombs and in the mountains and slashing himself with stones. (Mark 5:5)**
- **But on catching sight of Jesus from a distance he ran and did obeisance to him. (Mark 5:6)**
- **And, when he had cried out with a loud voice, he said; What have I to do with you, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? I put you under oath by God not to torment me. (Mark 5:7)**
- **For he had been telling it; Come out of the man, you unclean spirit. (Mark 5:8)**
- **But he began to ask him; What is your name? And he said to him; My name is Legion, because there are many of us. (Mark 5:9)**
- **And he entreated him many times not to send the spirits out of the country. (Mark 5:10)**

- **Now a great herd of swine was there at the mountain feeding. (Mark 5:11)**
- **So they entreated him, saying; Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them. (Mark 5:12)**
- **And he permitted them. With that the unclean spirits came out and entered into the swine, and the herd rushed over the precipice into the sea, about two thousand of them, and they drowned one after another in the sea. (Mark 5:13)**
- **And they were astounded at his way of teaching, because his speech was with authority. (Luke 4:32)**
- **Now in the synagogue there was a man with a spirit, an unclean demon, and he shouted with a loud voice. (Luke 4:33)**
- **Ah! What have we to do with you, **Jesus** you Nazarene? Did you come to destroy us? I know exactly who you are, the Holy One of God. (Luke 4:34)**
- **But **Jesus** rebuked it, saying; Be silent, and come out of him. So, after throwing the man down in their midst, the demon came out of him without hurting him. (Luke 4:35)**
- **At this, astonishment fell upon all, and they began to converse with one another, saying; What sort of speech is this, because with authority and power he orders the unclean spirits, and out they come? (Luke 4:36)**
- **If it is by means of Beelzebub I expel the demons, by whom do your sons expel them? Because of this they will be judges of you. (Luke 11:19)**
- **But if it is by means of God's finger I expel the demons, the kingdom of God has really overtaken you. (Luke 11:20)**
- **When a strong man, well armed, guards his palace, his belongings continue in peace. (Luke 11:21)**
- **But when someone stronger than he is comes against him and conquers him, he takes away his full armament in which he was trusting, and he divides out the things he despoiled him of. (Luke**

11:22)

- **He that is not on my side is against me, and he that does not gather with me scatters. (Luke 11:23)**
- **When an unclean spirit comes out of a man, it passes through parched places in search of a resting-place, and, after finding none, it says, I will return to my house out of which I moved. (Luke 11:24)**
- **And on arriving it finds it swept clean and adorned. (Luke 11:25)**
- **Then it goes its way and takes along seven different spirits more wicked than itself, and, after getting inside, they dwell there, and the final circumstances of that man become worse than the first. (Luke 11:26)**
- **If, now, the Good News we declare is in fact veiled, it is veiled among those who are perishing. (2 Corinthians 4:3)**
- **Among whom the god of this system of things has blinded the minds of the unbelievers, that the illumination of the glorious Good News about the Christ, who is the image of God, might not shine through. (2 Corinthians 4:4)**
- **Finally, go on acquiring power in the Lord and in the mightiness of his strength. (Ephesians 6:10)**
- **Put on the complete suit of armor from God that you may be able to stand firm against the machinations of the Devil. (Ephesians 6:11)**
- **Because we have a wrestling, not against blood and flesh, but against the governments, against the authorities, against the world rulers of this darkness, against the wicked spirit forces in the heavenly places. (Ephesians 6:12)**
- **Hypocritical religious leaders showed they were actually in opposition to God's sovereignty and will.**
- **Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! Because you shut up the kingdom of the heavens before men, for you yourselves do not go in, neither do you permit those on their way in to go in. (Matthew 23:13)**

- **Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! Because you resemble whitewashed graves, which outwardly indeed appear beautiful but inside are full of dead men's bones and of every sort of uncleanness. (Matthew 23:27)**
- **In that way you also, outwardly indeed, appear righteous to men, but inside you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness. (Matthew 23:28)**
- **So when he went out from there the scribes and the Pharisees started in to press upon him terribly and to ply him with questions about further things. (Luke 11:53)**
- **Lying in wait for him, to catch something out of his mouth. (Luke 11:54)**
- **For this reason Pilate kept on seeking how to release him. But the Jews shouted, saying; If you release this man, you are not a friend of Caesar. Every man making himself a king speaks against Caesar. (John 19:12)**
- **Therefore Pilate, after hearing these words, brought Jesus outside, and he sat down on a judgment seat in a place called The Stone Pavement, but, in Hebrew, *Gabbatha*. (John 19:13)**
- **Now it was preparation of the Passover. It was about the sixth hour. And he said to the Jews; See! your king! (John 19:14)**
- **However, they shouted; Take him away! Take him away! Impale him! Pilate said to them; Shall I impale your king? The chief priests answered; We have no king but Caesar. (John 19:15)**
- **At that time, therefore, he handed him over to them to be impaled. Then they took charge of Jesus. (John 19:16)**
- **Jesus thoroughly defeated them in a series of verbal encounters. He wielded the sword of the spirit, God's Word, with strength, perfect control, and strategy cutting through subtle arguments and trap-like questions that his opposers advanced, putting them in a corner or on the horns of a dilemma.**
- **Now after he went into the temple, the chief priests and the**

- older men of the people came up to him while he was teaching and said; By what authority do you do these things? And who gave you this authority? (**Matthew 21:23**)
- In reply **Jesus** said to them; I, also, will ask you one thing. If you tell it to me, I also will tell you by what authority I do these things. (**Matthew 21:24**)
 - The baptism by John, from what source was it? From heaven or from men? But they began to reason among themselves, saying; If we say; From heaven, he will say to us; Why, then, did you not believe him? (**Matthew 21:25**)
 - If, though, we say; From men, we have the crowd to fear, for they all hold John as a prophet. (**Matthew 21:26**)
 - So in answer to **Jesus** they said; We do not know. He, in turn, said to them; Neither am I telling you by what authority I do these things. (**Matthew 21:27**)
 - Then the Pharisees went their way and took counsel together in order to trap him in his speech. (**Matthew 22:15**)
 - So they dispatched to him their disciples, together with party followers of Herod, saying; Teacher, we know you are truthful and teach the way of God in truth, and you do not care for anybody, for you do not look upon men's outward appearance. (**Matthew 22:16**)
 - Tell us, therefore, what do you think? Is it lawful to pay head tax to Caesar or not? (**Matthew 22:17**)
 - But **Jesus**, knowing their wickedness, said; Why do you put me to the test, hypocrites? (**Matthew 22:18**)
 - Show me the head tax coin. They brought him a denarius. (**Matthew 22:19**)
 - And he said to them; Whose image and inscription is this? (**Matthew 22:20**)
 - They said; Caesar's. Then he said to them; Pay back, therefore, Caesar's things to Caesar, but God's things to God. (**Matthew 22:21**)

- Well, when they heard that, they marveled, and leaving him they went off. (**Matthew 22:22**)
- On that day Sadducees, who say there is no resurrection, came up to him and asked him. (**Matthew 22:23**)
- Teacher, Moses said; If any man dies without having children, his brother must take his wife in marriage and raise up offspring for his brother. (**Matthew 22:24**)
- Now there were seven brothers with us, and the first married and deceased, and, not having offspring, he left his wife for his brother. (**Matthew 22:25**)
- It went the same way also with the second and the third, until through all seven. (**Matthew 22:26**)
- Last of all the woman died. (**Matthew 22:27**)
- Consequently, in the resurrection, to which of the seven will she be wife? For they all got her. (**Matthew 22:28**)
- In reply **Jesus** said to them; You are mistaken, because you know neither the Scriptures nor the power of God. (**Matthew 22:29**)
- For in the resurrection neither do men marry nor are women given in marriage, but are as angels in heaven. (**Matthew 22:30**)
- As regards the resurrection of the dead, did you not read what was spoken to you by God, saying; (**Matthew 22:31**)
- I am the God of Abraham and the God of Isaac and the God of Jacob? He is the God, not of the dead, but of the living. (**Matthew 22:32**)
- On hearing that, the crowds were astounded at his teaching. (**Matthew 22:33**)
- After the Pharisees heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they came together in one group. (**Matthew 22:34**)
- And one of them, versed in the Law, asked, testing him.

(Matthew 22:35)

- **Teacher, which is the greatest commandment in the Law? (Matthew 22:36)**
- **He said to him; You must love Yehowah your God with your whole heart and with your whole soul and with your whole mind. (Matthew 22:37)**
- **This is the greatest and first commandment. (Matthew 22:38)**
- **The second, like it, is this; You must love your neighbor as yourself. (Matthew 22:39)**
- **On these two commandments the whole Law hangs, and the Prophets. (Matthew 22:40)**
- **Now while the Pharisees were gathered together **Jesus** asked them: (Matthew 22:41)**
- **What do you think about the Christ? Whose son is he? They said to him; David's. (Matthew 22:42)**
- **He said to them; How, then, is it that David by inspiration calls him Lord, saying; (Matthew 22:43)**
- **Yehowah said to my Lord; Sit at my right hand until I put your enemies beneath your feet? (Matthew 22:44)**
- **If, therefore, David calls him Lord, how is he his son? (Matthew 22:45)**
- **And nobody was able to say a word in reply to him, nor did anyone dare from that day on to question him any further. (Matthew 22:46)**
- **He fearlessly exposed them for what they were, teachers of human traditions and formalisms, blind leaders, a generation of vipers, and children of God's Adversary, who is the prince of the demons and a murderous liar.**
- **Then the disciples came up and said to him; Do you know that the Pharisees stumbled at hearing what you said? (Matthew 15:12)**

- **In reply he said; Every plant that my heavenly Father did not plant will be uprooted. (Matthew 15:13)**
- **Let them be. Blind guides is what they are. If, then, a blind man guides a blind man, both will fall into a pit. (Matthew 15:14)**
- **Hear another illustration. There was a man, a householder, who planted a vineyard and put a fence around it and dug a winepress in it and erected a tower, and let it out to cultivators, and traveled abroad. (Matthew 21:33)**
- **When the season of the fruits came around, he dispatched his slaves to the cultivators to get his fruits. (Matthew 21:34)**
- **However, the cultivators took his slaves, and one they beat up, another they killed, another they stoned. (Matthew 21:35)**
- **Again he dispatched other slaves, more than the first, but they did the same to these. (Matthew 21:36)**
- **Lastly he dispatched his son to them, saying; They will respect my son. (Matthew 21:37)**
- **On seeing the son the cultivators said among themselves; This is the heir. Come, let us kill him and get his inheritance! (Matthew 21:38)**
- **So they took him and threw him out of the vineyard and killed him. (Matthew 21:39)**
- **Therefore, when the owner of the vineyard comes, what will he do to those cultivators? (Matthew 21:40)**
- **They said to him; Because they are evil, he will bring an evil destruction upon them and will let out the vineyard to other cultivators, who will render him the fruits when they become due. (Matthew 21:41)**
- **Now when the chief priests and the Pharisees had heard his illustrations, they took note that he was speaking about them. (Matthew 21:45)**
- **But, although they were seeking to seize him, they feared the**

crowds, because these held him to be a prophet. (**Matthew 21:46**)

- Serpents, offspring of vipers, how are you to flee from the judgment of Gehenna? (**Matthew 23:33**)
- For this reason, here I am sending forth to you prophets and wise men and public instructors. Some of them you will kill and impale, and some of them you will scourge in your synagogues and persecute from city to city. (**Matthew 23:34**)
- That there may come upon you all the righteous blood spilled on earth, from the blood of righteous Abel to the blood of Zechariah son of Barachiah, whom you murdered between the sanctuary and the altar. (**Matthew 23:35**)
- Now the Pharisees and some of the scribes that had come from Jerusalem gathered about him. (**Mark 7:1**)
- And when they saw some of his disciples eat their meal with defiled hands, that is, unwashed ones. (**Mark 7:2**)
- For the Pharisees and all the Jews do not eat unless they wash their hands up to the elbow, holding fast the tradition of the men of former times. (**Mark 7:3**)
- And, when back from market, they do not eat unless they cleanse themselves by sprinkling, and there are many other traditions that they have received to hold fast, baptisms of cups and pitchers and copper vessels. (**Mark 7:4**)
- So these Pharisees and scribes asked him; Why is it your disciples do not conduct themselves according to the tradition of the men of former times, but they take their meal with defiled hands? (**Mark 7:5**)
- He said to them; Isaiah aptly prophesied about you hypocrites, as it is written: This people honor me with their lips, but their hearts are far removed from me. (**Mark 7:6**)
- It is in vain that they keep worshiping me, because they teach as doctrines commands of men. (**Mark 7:7**)
- Letting go the commandment of God, you hold fast the tradition

of men. (**Mark 7:8**)

- Further, he went on to say to them; Adroitly you set aside the commandment of God in order to retain your tradition. (**Mark 7:9**)
- For example, Moses said; Honor your father and your mother, and, Let him that reviles father or mother end up in death. (**Mark 7:10**)
- But you men say; If a man says to his father or his mother; Whatever I have by which you may get benefit from me is corban, that is, a gift dedicated to God. (**Mark 7:11**)
- You men no longer let him do a single thing for his father or his mother. (**Mark 7:12**)
- And thus you make the word of God invalid by your tradition which you handed down. And many things similar to this you do. (**Mark 7:13**)
- But now you are seeking to kill me, a man that has told you the truth that I heard from God. Abraham did not do this. (**John 8:40**)
- You do the works of your father. They said to him; We were not born from fornication, we have one Father, God. (**John 8:41**)
- **Jesus** said to them; If God were your Father, you would love me, for from God I came forth and am here. Neither have I come of my own initiative at all, but that One sent me forth. (**John 8:42**)
- Why is it you do not know what I am speaking? Because you cannot listen to my word. (**John 8:43**)
- You are from your father the Devil, and you wish to do the desires of your father. That one was a manslayer when he began, and he did not stand fast in the truth, because truth is not in him. When he speaks the lie, he speaks according to his own disposition, because he is a liar and the father of the lie. (**John 8:44**)
- Because I, on the other hand, tell the truth, you do not believe me. (**John 8:45**)

- In all of this, **Jesus** was never foolhardy, sought no trouble, and avoided unnecessary danger.
- But the Pharisees went out and took counsel against him that they might destroy him. (**Matthew 12:14**)
- Having come to know this, **Jesus** withdrew from there. Many also followed him, and he cured them all. (**Matthew 12:15**)
- At that the Pharisees went out and immediately began holding council with the party followers of Herod against him, in order to destroy him. (**Mark 3:6**)
- But **Jesus** with his disciples withdrew to the sea, and a great multitude from Galilee and from Judea followed him. (**Mark 3:7**)
- Now after these things **Jesus** continued walking about in Galilee, for he did not want to walk about in Judea, because the Jews were seeking to kill him. (**John 7:1**)
- But when his brothers had gone up to the festival, then he also went up himself, not openly but as in secret. (**John 7:10**)
- Therefore from that day on they took counsel to kill him. (**John 11:53**)
- Hence **Jesus** no longer walked about publicly among the Jews, but he departed from there to the country near the wilderness, into a city called Ephraim, and there he remained with the disciples. (**John 11:54**)
- Look! I am sending you forth as sheep amidst wolves. Therefore prove yourselves cautious as serpents, and yet innocent as doves. (**Matthew 10:16**)
- Be on your guard against men, for they will deliver you up to local courts, and they will scourge you in their synagogues. (**Matthew 10:17**)
- And do not become fearful of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul, but rather be in fear of him that can destroy both soul and body in Gehenna. (**Matthew 10:28**)

- Do not two sparrows sell for a coin of small value? Yet not one of them will fall to the ground without your Fathers knowledge. (**Matthew 10:29**)
- But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. (**Matthew 10:30**)
- Therefore have no fear, you are worth more than many sparrows. (**Matthew 10:31**)
- His courage was based on faith.
- Now a great violent windstorm broke out, and the waves kept dashing into the boat, so that the boat was close to being swamped. (**Mark 4:37**)
- But he was in the stern, sleeping upon a pillow. So they woke him up and said to him; Teacher, do you not care that we are about to perish? (**Mark 4:38**)
- With that he roused himself and rebuked the wind and said to the sea; Hush! Be quiet! And the wind abated, and a great calm set in. (**Mark 4:39**)
- So he said to them; Why are you fainthearted? Do you not yet have any faith? (**Mark 4:40**)
- He did not lose control of himself but remained calm when vilified and mistreated, committing himself to the one who judges righteously.
- When he was being reviled, he did not go reviling in return. When he was suffering, he did not go threatening, but kept on committing himself to the one who judges righteously. (**1 Peter 2:23**)
- By his courageous fight for the truth and by bringing light to the people concerning God's purpose, **Jesus**, as one greater than Moses, fulfilled the prophetic role of Liberator. He proclaimed freedom to the captives.
- Look! My servant, on whom I keep fast hold! My chosen one, whom my soul has approved! I have put my spirit in him. Justice to the nations is what he will bring forth. (**Isaiah 42:1**)

- **I myself, Yehowah, have called you in righteousness, and I proceeded to take hold of your hand. And I shall safeguard you and give you as a covenant of the people, as a light of the nations. (Isaiah 42:6)**
- **For you to open the blind eyes, to bring forth out of the dungeon the prisoner, out of the house of detention those sitting in darkness. (Isaiah 42:7)**
- **And it must occur in that day, is the utterance of Yehowah of armies, that I shall break ones yoke from off your neck, and your bands I shall tear in two, and no more will strangers exploit him as a servant. (Jeremiah 30:8)**
- **And they will certainly serve Yehowah their God and David their king, whom I shall raise up for them. (Jeremiah 30:9)**
- **And as for you, do not be afraid, O my servant Jacob, is the utterance of Yehowah, and do not be struck with terror, O Israel. For here I am saving you from far off and your offspring from the land of their captivity. And Jacob will certainly return and be free of disturbance and be at ease, and there will be no one causing trembling. (Jeremiah 30:10)**
- **The spirit of the Sovereign Lord Yehowah is upon me, for the reason that Yehowah has anointed me to tell Good News to the meek ones. He has sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to those taken captive and the wide opening of the eyes even to the prisoners. (Isaiah 61:1)**
- **Though many held back for selfish reasons and out of fear of the element in power.**
- **Therefore the Jews began looking for him at the festival and saying; Where is that man? (John 7:11)**
- **And there was a lot of subdued talk about him among the crowds. Some would say; He is a good man. Others would say; He is not, but he misleads the crowd. (John 7:12)**
- **No one, of course, would speak about him publicly because of the fear of the Jews. (John 7:13)**

- His parents said these things because they were in fear of the Jews, for the Jews had already come to an agreement that, if anyone confessed him as Christ, he should get expelled from the synagogue. (**John 9:22**)
- All the same, many even of the rulers actually put faith in him, but because of the Pharisees they would not confess him, in order not to be expelled from the synagogue. (**John 12:42**)
- For they loved the glory of men more than even the glory of God. (**John 12:43**)
- Others gained courage to break free of their chains of ignorance and slavish subservience to false leaders and false hopes.
- Therefore a second time they called the man that had been blind and said to him; Give glory to God! We know that this man is a sinner. (**John 9:24**)
- In turn he answered; Whether he is a sinner I do not know. One thing I do know, that, whereas I was blind, I see at present. (**John 9:25**)
- Therefore they said to him; What did he do to you? How did he open your eyes? (**John 9:26**)
- He answered them; I told you already, and yet you did not listen. Why do you want to hear it again? You do not want to become his disciples also, do you? (**John 9:27**)
- At this they reviled him and said; You are a disciple of that man, but we are disciples of Moses. (**John 9:28**)
- We know that God has spoken to Moses. But as for this man, we do not know where he is from. (**John 9:29**)
- In answer the man said to them; This certainly is a marvel, that you do not know where he is from, and yet he opened my eyes. (**John 9:30**)
- We know that God does not listen to sinners, but if anyone is God-fearing and does his will, he listens to this one. (**John 9:31**)
- From of old it has never been heard that anyone opened the eyes

of one born blind. (**John 9:32**)

- If this man were not from God, he could do nothing at all. (**John 9:33**)
- In answer they said to him; You were altogether born in sins, and yet are you teaching us? And they threw him out! (**John 9:34**)
- **Jesus** heard that they had thrown him out, and, on finding him, he said; Are you putting faith in the Son of man? (**John 9:35**)
- The man answered; And who is he, sir, that I may put faith in him? (**John 9:36**)
- **Jesus** said to him; You have seen him and, besides, he that is speaking with you is that one. (**John 9:37**)
- Then he said; I do put faith in him, Lord. And he did obeisance to him. (**John 9:38**)
- And **Jesus** said; For this judgment I came into this world, that those not seeing might see and those seeing might become blind. (**John 9:39**)
- For such freedom Christ set us free. Therefore stand fast, and do not let yourselves be confined again in a yoke of slavery. (**Galatians 5:1**)
- **As faithful Judean kings had waged campaigns to eliminate false worship from the realm.**
- And as soon as Asa heard these words and the prophecy of Oded the prophet, he took courage and proceeded to cause the disgusting things to vanish from all the land of Judah and Benjamin and from the cities that he had captured from the mountainous region of Ephraim, and to renew Yehowah's altar that was before the porch of Yehowah. (**2 Chronicles 15:8**)
- And Jehoshaphat his son began to reign in place of him and to make his position strong over Israel. (**2 Chronicles 17:1**)
- For it was for the God of his father that he searched and in his commandment he walked, and not according to the doing of

Israel. (2 Chronicles 17:4)

- **And Yehowah kept the kingdom firmly established in his hand, and all Judah continued to give presents to Jehoshaphat, and he came to have riches and glory in abundance. (2 Chronicles 17:5)**
- **And his heart became bold in the ways of Yehowah, and he even removed the high places and the sacred poles from Judah. (2 Chronicles 17:6)**
- **And it came about in the third year of Hoshea the son of Elah the king of Israel that Hezekiah the son of Ahaz the king of Judah became king. (2 Kings 18:1)**
- **And he continued to do what was right in Yehowah's eyes, according to all that David his forefather had done. (2 Kings 18:3)**
- **He it was that removed the high places and broke the sacred pillars to pieces and cut down the sacred pole and crushed to pieces the copper serpent that Moses had made, for down to those days the sons of Israel had continually been making sacrificial smoke to it, and it used to be called the copper serpent-idol. (2 Kings 18:4)**
- **In Yehowah the God of Israel he trusted, and after him there proved to be no one like him among all the kings of Judah, even those who had happened to be prior to him. (2 Kings 18:5)**
- **And he kept sticking to Yehowah. He did not turn aside from following him, but he continued keeping his commandments that Yehowah had commanded Moses. (2 Kings 18:6)**
- **So, too, the ministry of **Jesus**, God's Messianic King, had a devastating effect on false religion in his day.**
- **Consequently the chief priests and the Pharisees gathered the Sanhedrin together and began to say; What are we to do, because this man performs many signs? (John 11:47)**
- **If we let him alone this way, **they will all put faith in him**, and the Romans will come and take away both our place and our nation. (John 11:48)**

- For further information regarding the earthly ministry of **Jesus Christ**,

· **Depth Of Feeling And Warmth**

- But **Jesus** was also a man of great feeling, a requirement for serving as God's High Priest. His perfection did not make him hypercritical or arrogant and overbearing, as were the Pharisees, toward the imperfect, sin-laden persons among whom he lived and worked.
- Later, while he was reclining at the table in the house, look! Many tax collectors and sinners came and began reclining with **Jesus** and his disciples. (**Matthew 9:10**)
- But on seeing this the Pharisees began to say to his disciples; Why is it that your teacher eats with tax collectors and sinners? (**Matthew 9:11**)
- Hearing them, he said; Persons in health do not need a physician, but the ailing do. (**Matthew 9:12**)
- Go, then, and learn what this means, I want mercy, and not sacrifice. For I came to call, not righteous people, but sinners. (**Matthew 9:13**)
- Which of the two did the will of his father? They said; The latter. **Jesus** said to them; Truly I say to you that the tax collectors and the harlots are going ahead of you into the kingdom of God. (**Matthew 21:31**)
- For John came to you in a way of righteousness, but you did not believe him. However, the tax collectors and the harlots believed him, and you, although you saw this, did not feel regret afterwards so as to believe him. (**Matthew 21:32**)
- Now a certain one of the Pharisees kept asking him to dine with him. Accordingly he entered into the house of the Pharisee and reclined at the table. (**Luke 7:36**)
- And, look! A woman who was known in the city to be a sinner learned that he was reclining at a meal in the house of the Pharisee, and she brought an alabaster case of perfumed oil. (**Luke 7:37**)

- **And, taking a position behind at his feet, she wept and started to wet his feet with her tears and she would wipe them off with the hair of her head. Also, she tenderly kissed his feet and greased them with the perfumed oil. (Luke 7:38)**
- **At the sight the Pharisee that invited him said within himself; This man, if he were a prophet, would know who and what kind of woman it is that is touching him, that she is a sinner. (Luke 7:39)**
- **But in reply Jesus said to him; Simon, I have something to say to you. He said; Teacher, say it! (Luke 7:40)**
- **Two men were debtors to a certain lender. The one was in debt for five hundred denarii, but the other for fifty. (Luke 7:41)**
- **When they did not have anything with which to pay back, he freely forgave them both. Therefore, which of them will love him the more? (Luke 7:42)**
- **In answer Simon said; I suppose it is the one to whom he freely forgave the more. He said to him; You judged correctly. (Luke 7:43)**
- **With that he turned to the woman and said to Simon; Do you behold this woman? I entered into your house; You gave me no water for my feet. But this woman wet my feet with her tears and wiped them off with her hair. (Luke 7:44)**
- **You gave me no kiss. But this woman, from the hour that I came in, did not leave off tenderly kissing my feet. (Luke 7:45)**
- **You did not grease my head with oil. But this woman greased my feet with perfumed oil. (Luke 7:46)**
- **By virtue of this, I tell you, her sins, many though they are, are forgiven, because she loved much. But he who is forgiven little, loves little. (Luke 7:47)**
- **Then he said to her; Your sins are forgiven. (Luke 7:48)**
- **Now all the tax collectors and the sinners kept drawing near to him to hear him. (Luke 15:1)**

- **Consequently both the Pharisees and the scribes kept muttering, saying; This man welcomes sinners and eats with them. (Luke 15:2)**
- **Then he spoke this illustration to them, saying; (Luke 15:3)**
- **What man of you with a hundred sheep, on losing one of them, will not leave the ninety-nine behind in the wilderness and go for the lost one until he finds it? (Luke 15:4)**
- **And when he has found it he puts it upon his shoulders and rejoices. (Luke 15:5)**
- **And when he gets home he calls his friends and his neighbors together, saying to them, Rejoice with me, because I have found my sheep that was lost. (Luke 15:6)**
- **I tell you that thus there will be more joy in heaven over one sinner that repents than over ninety-nine righteous ones who have no need of repentance. (Luke 15:7)**
- **Or what woman with ten drachma coins, if she loses one drachma coin, does not light a lamp and sweep her house and search carefully until she finds it? (Luke 15:8)**
- **And when she has found it she calls the women who are her friends and neighbors together, saying; Rejoice with me, because I have found the drachma coin that I lost. (Luke 15:9)**
- **Thus, I tell you, joy arises among the angels of God over one sinner that repents. (Luke 15:10)**
- **Then he said; A certain man had two sons. (Luke 15:11)**
- **And the younger of them said to his father; Father, give me the part of the property that falls to my share. Then he divided his means of living to them. (Luke 15:12)**
- **Later, after not many days, the younger son gathered all things together and traveled abroad into a distant country, and there squandered his property by living a debauched life. (Luke 15:13)**
- **When he had spent everything, a severe famine occurred**

throughout that country, and he started to be in need. (**Luke 15:14**)

- He even went and attached himself to one of the citizens of that country, and he sent him into his fields to herd swine. (**Luke 15:15**)
- And he used to desire to be filled with the carob pods which the swine were eating, and no one would give him anything. (**Luke 15:16**)
- When he came to his senses, he said; How many hired men of my father are abounding with bread, while I am perishing here from famine! (**Luke 15:17**)
- I will rise and journey to my father and say to him; Father, I have sinned against heaven and against you. (**Luke 15:18**)
- I am no longer worthy of being called your son. Make me as one of your hired men. (**Luke 15:19**)
- So he rose and went to his father. While he was yet a long way off, his father caught sight of him and was moved with pity, and he ran and fell upon his neck and tenderly kissed him. (**Luke 15:20**)
- Then the son said to him, Father, I have sinned against heaven and against you. I am no longer worthy of being called your son. Make me as one of your hired men. (**Luke 15:21**)
- But the father said to his slaves; Quick! Bring out a robe, the best one, and clothe him with it, and put a ring on his hand and sandals on his feet. (**Luke 15:22**)
- And bring the fattened young bull, slaughter it and let us eat and enjoy ourselves. (**Luke 15:23**)
- Because this my son was dead and came to life again, he was lost and was found. And they started to enjoy themselves. (**Luke 15:24**)
- Now his older son was in the field, and as he came and got near the house he heard a music concert and dancing. (**Luke 15:25**)

- **So he called one of the servants to him and inquired what these things meant. (Luke 15:26)**
- **He said to him; Your brother has come, and your father slaughtered the fattened young bull, because he got him back in good health. (Luke 15:27)**
- **But he became wrathful and was unwilling to go in. Then his father came out and began to entreat him. (Luke 15:28)**
- **In reply he said to his father; Here it is so many years I have slaved for you and never once did I transgress your commandment, and yet to me you never once gave a kid for me to enjoy myself with my friends. (Luke 15:29)**
- **But as soon as this your son who ate up your means of living with harlots arrived, you slaughtered the fattened young bull for him. (Luke 15:30)**
- **Then he said to him; Child, you have always been with me, and all the things that are mine are yours. (Luke 15:31)**
- **But we just had to enjoy ourselves and rejoice, because this your brother was dead and came to life, and he was lost and was found. (Luke 15:32)**
- **But he spoke this illustration also to some who trusted in themselves that they were righteous and who considered the rest as nothing. (Luke 18:9)**
- **Two men went up into the temple to pray, the one a Pharisee and the other a tax collector. (Luke 18:10)**
- **The Pharisee stood and began to pray these things to himself, O God, I thank you I am not as the rest of men, extortioners, unrighteous, adulterers, or even as this tax collector. (Luke 18:11)**
- **I fast twice a week, I give the tenth of all things I acquire. (Luke 18:12)**
- **But the tax collector standing at a distance was not willing even to raise his eyes heavenward, but kept beating his breast, saying; O God, be gracious to me a sinner. (Luke 18:13)**

- **I tell you, This man went down to his home proved more righteous than that man, because everyone that exalts himself will be humiliated, but he that humbles himself will be exalted. (Luke 18:14)**
- **Even children could feel at ease with him, and when using a child as an example, he did not merely stand the child before his disciples, but also put his arms around it.**
- **And he took a young child, stood it in their midst and put his arms around it and said to them. (Mark 9:36)**
- **Now people began bringing him young children for him to touch these, but the disciples reprimanded them. (Mark 10:13)**
- **At seeing this **Jesus** was indignant and said to them; Let the young children come to me. Do not try to stop them, for the kingdom of God belongs to suchlike ones. (Mark 10:14)**
- **Truly I say to you, whoever does not receive the kingdom of God like a young child will by no means enter into it. (Mark 10:15)**
- **And he took the children into his arms and began blessing them, laying his hands upon them. (Mark 10:16)**
- **He proved himself a real friend and affectionate companion to his followers, loving them to the end.**
- **Now, because he knew before the festival of the Passover that his hour had come for him to move out of this world to the Father, **Jesus**, having loved his own that were in the world, loved them to the end. (John 13:1)**
- **These things I have spoken to you, that my joy may be in you and your joy may be made full. (John 15:11)**
- **This is my commandment, that you love one another just as I have loved you. (John 15:12)**
- **No one has love greater than this, that someone should surrender his soul in behalf of his friends. (John 15:13)**
- **You are my friends if you do what I am commanding you. (John**

15:14)

- I no longer call you slaves, because a slave does not know what his master does. But I have called you friends, because all the things I have heard from my Father I have made known to you. (**John 15:15**)
- He did not use his authority to be demanding and to add to the peoples burdens but, rather, said; Come to me, all you who are toiling, and I will refresh you. His disciples found him mild-tempered and lowly in heart, his yoke kindly and his load light.
- Come to me, all you who are toiling and loaded down, and I will refresh you. (**Matthew 11:28**)
- Take my yoke upon you and learn from me, for I am mild-tempered and lowly in heart, and you will find refreshment for your souls. (**Matthew 11:29**)
- For my yoke is kindly and my load is light. (**Matthew 11:30**)
- Priestly duties included care for the physical and spiritual health of the people. (**Leviticus Chapters 13-15**)
- Pity and compassion moved **Jesus** to help the people suffering from illness, blindness, and other afflictions.
- On seeing the crowds he felt pity for them, because they were skinned and thrown about like sheep without a shepherd. (**Matthew 9:36**)
- Now when he came forth he saw a great crowd, and he felt pity for them, and he cured their sick ones. (**Matthew 14:14**)
- Moved with pity, **Jesus** touched their eyes, and immediately they received sight, and they followed him. (**Matthew 20:34**)
- Closely following this he traveled to a city called Nain, and his disciples and a great crowd were traveling with him. (**Luke 7:11**)
- As he got near the gate of the city, why, look! There was a dead man being carried out, the only-begotten son of his mother. Besides, she was a widow. A considerable crowd from the city was also with her. (**Luke 7:12**)

- And when the Lord caught sight of her, he was moved with pity for her, and he said to her; Stop weeping. (Luke 7:13)
- With that he approached and touched the bier, and the bearers stood still, and he said; Young man, I say to you; Get up! (Luke 7:14)
- And the dead man sat up and started to speak, and he gave him to his mother. (Luke 7:15)
- The spirit of the Sovereign Lord Yehowah is upon me, for the reason that Yehowah has anointed me to tell Good News to the meek ones. He has sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to those taken captive and the wide opening of the eyes even to the prisoners. (Isaiah 61:1)
- The death of his friend Lazarus and the resulting grief to Lazarus sisters caused **Jesus** to groan and give way to tears.
- And so Mary, when she arrived where **Jesus** was and caught sight of him, fell at his feet, saying to him; Lord, if you had been here, my brother would not have died. (John 11:32)
- **Jesus**, therefore, when he saw her weeping and the Jews that came with her weeping, groaned in the spirit and became troubled. (John 11:33)
- And he said; Where have you laid him? They said to him; Lord, come and see. (John 11:34)
- **Jesus** gave way to tears. (John 11:35)
- Therefore the Jews began to say; See, what affection he used to have for him! (John 11:36)
- Thus, in an anticipatory way, **Jesus** the Messiah carried the sicknesses and bore the pains of others, doing so at the cost of power from himself.
- Truly our sicknesses were what he himself carried, and as for our pains, he bore them. But we ourselves accounted him as plagued, stricken by God and afflicted. (Isaiah 53:4)

- **And a woman, subject to a flow of blood for twelve years, who had not been able to get a cure from anyone. (Luke 8:43)**
- **Approached from behind and touched the fringe of his outer garment, and instantly her flow of blood stopped. (Luke 8:44)**
- **So Jesus said; Who was it that touched me? When they were all denying it, Peter said; Instructor, the crowds are hemming you in and closely pressing you. (Luke 8:45)**
- **Yet Jesus said; Someone touched me, for I perceived that power went out of me. (Luke 8:46)**
- **Seeing that she had not escaped notice, the woman came trembling and fell down before him and disclosed before all the people the cause for which she touched him and how she was healed instantly. (Luke 8:47)**
- **But he said to her; Daughter, your faith has made you well, go your way in peace. (Luke 8:48)**
- **He did so not only in fulfillment of prophecy, but because he wanted to.**
- **And, look! A leprous man came up and began doing obeisance to him, saying; Lord, if you just want to, you can make me clean. (Matthew 8:2)**
- **And so, stretching out his hand, he touched him, saying; I want to. Be made clean. And immediately his leprosy was cleansed away. (Matthew 8:3)**
- **Then Jesus said to him; See that you tell no one, but go, show yourself to the priest, and offer the gift that Moses appointed, for the purpose of a witness to them. (Matthew 8:4)**
- **But after it became evening, people brought him many demon-possessed persons, and he expelled the spirits with a word, and he cured all who were faring badly. (Matthew 8:16)**
- **That there might be fulfilled what was spoken through Isaiah the prophet, saying; He himself took our sicknesses and carried our diseases. (Matthew 8:17)**

- **More important, he brought them spiritual health and forgiveness of sins, being authorized to do so because, as the Christ, he was foreordained to provide the ransom sacrifice, in fact was already undergoing the baptism into death that would terminate on the torture stake.**
- **Truly our sicknesses were what he himself carried, and as for our pains, he bore them. But we ourselves accounted him as plagued, stricken by God and afflicted. (Isaiah 53:4)**
- **But he was being pierced for our transgression. He was being crushed for our errors. The chastisement meant for our peace was upon him. Because of his wounds there has been a healing for us. (Isaiah 53:5)**
- **Like sheep we have all of us wandered about. It was each one to his own way that we have turned. Yehowah himself has caused the error of us all, to meet up with that one. (Isaiah 53:6)**
- **He was hard pressed, and he was letting himself be afflicted. Yet he would not open his mouth. He was being brought just like a sheep to the slaughtering. Like a ewe that before her shearers has become mute, he also would not open his mouth. (Isaiah 53:7)**
- **Because of restraint and of judgment he was taken away, and who will concern himself even with the details of his generation? For he was severed from the land of the living ones. Because of the transgression of my people he had the stroke. (Isaiah 53:8)**
- **Because of the trouble of his soul he will see, he will be satisfied. By means of his knowledge the righteous one, my servant, will bring a righteous standing to many people, and their errors he himself will bear. (Isaiah 53:11)**
- **For that reason I shall deal him a portion among the many, and it will be with the mighty ones that he will apportion the spoil, due to the fact that he poured out his soul to the very death, and it was with the transgressors that he was counted in, and he himself carried the very sin of many people, and for the transgressors he proceeded to interpose. (Isaiah 53:12)**
- **And, look! They were bringing him a paralyzed man lying on a bed. On seeing their faith **Jesus** said to the paralytic; Take**

courage, child, your sins are forgiven. (**Matthew 9:2**)

- And, look! Certain of the scribes said to themselves; This fellow is blaspheming. (**Matthew 9:3**)
- And **Jesus**, knowing their thoughts, said; Why are you thinking wicked things in your hearts? (**Matthew 9:4**)
- For instance, which is easier, to say; Your sins are forgiven, or to say; Get up and walk? (**Matthew 9:5**)
- However, in order for you to know that the Son of man has authority on earth to forgive sins then he said to the paralytic; Get up, pick up your bed, and go to your home. (**Matthew 9:6**)
- And he got up and went off to his home. (**Matthew 9:7**)
- At the sight of this the crowds were struck with fear, and they glorified God, who gave such authority to men. (**Matthew 9:8**)
- Just as the Son of man came, not to be ministered to, but to minister and to give his soul a ransom in exchange for many. (**Matthew 20:28**)
- But **Jesus** said to them; You do not know what you are asking for. Are you able to drink the cup which I am drinking, or to be baptized with the baptism with which I am being baptized? (**Mark 10:38**)
- They said to him; We are able. At that **Jesus** said to them; The cup I am drinking you will drink, and with the baptism with which I am being baptized you will be baptized. (**Mark 10:39**)
- Indeed, I have a baptism with which to be baptized, and how I am being distressed until it is finished! (**Luke 12:50**)

•• Wonderful Counselor

- The priest was responsible for the education of the people in God's Law and will.
- For the lips of a priest are the ones that should keep knowledge, and the Law is what people should seek from his mouth, for he is the messenger of Yehowah of armies. (**Malachi 2:7**)

- Also, as the royal Messiah, the foretold twig out of the stump of Jesse, David's father, **Jesus** had to manifest the spirit of Yehowah in wisdom, counsel, mightiness, knowledge, along with the fear of Yehowah. Thereby God-fearing persons would find enjoyment by him.
- And there must go forth a twig out of the stump of Jesse, and out of his roots a sprout will be fruitful. ([Isaiah 11:1](#))
- And upon him the spirit of Yehowah must settle down, the spirit of wisdom and of understanding, the spirit of counsel and of mightiness, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of Yehowah. ([Isaiah 11:2](#))
- And there will be enjoyment by him in the fear of Yehowah. And he will not judge by any mere appearance to his eyes, nor reprove simply according to the thing heard by his ears. ([Isaiah 11:3](#))
- The unparalleled wisdom found in the teachings of **Jesus**, who was more than Solomon.
- The queen of the south will be raised up in the judgment with this generation and will condemn it, because she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon, but, look! Something more than Solomon is here. ([Matthew 12:42](#))
- Is one of the most powerful evidences that he was indeed the Son of God and that the Gospel accounts could not be the mere product of imperfect men's minds or imagination.
- Jesus** proved himself to be the promised, **Wonderful Counselor**.
- For there has been a child born to us, there has been a son given to us. The princely rule will come to be upon his shoulder. His name will be called **Wonderful Counselor**, Mighty God, Eternal Father, Prince of Peace. ([Isaiah 9:6](#))
- By his knowledge of God's Word and will, by his understanding of human nature, by his ability to get to the heart of questions and issues, and by showing the solution to problems of daily living. The well-known Sermon on the Mount is a prime example of this. ([Matthew Chapters 5-7](#))

- In it his counsel showed the way to true happiness, how to settle quarrels, how to avoid immorality, how to deal with those showing enmity, the way to practice righteousness free from hypocrisy, the right attitude toward the material things of life, confidence in God's generosity, the golden rule for right relationships with others, the means for detecting religious frauds, and how to build for a secure future.
- Now when **Jesus** finished these sayings, the effect was that the crowds were astounded at his way of teaching. (**Matthew 7:28**)
- For he was teaching them as a person having authority, and not as their scribes. (**Matthew 7:29**)
- After his resurrection he continued to be the key figure in Yehowah's channel of communication to mankind.
- A revelation by **Jesus** Christ, which God gave him, to show his slaves the things that must shortly take place. And he sent forth his angel and presented it in signs through him to his slave John. (**Revelation 1:1**)

· Master Teacher

- His manner of teaching was remarkably effective.
- Therefore the officers went back to the chief priests and Pharisees, and the latter said to them; Why is it you did not bring him in? (**John 7:45**)
- The officers replied; Never has another man spoken like this. (**John 7:46**)
- He presented matters of great weight and depth with simplicity, brevity, and clarity. He illustrated his points with things well known to his listeners
- All these things **Jesus** spoke to the crowds by illustrations. Indeed, without an illustration he would not speak to them. (**Matthew 13:34**)
- That there might be fulfilled what was spoken through the prophet who said; I will open my mouth with illustrations, I will publish things hidden since the founding. (**Matthew 13:35**)

- **Fishermen**
- Again the kingdom of the heavens is like a dragnet let down into the sea and gathering up fish of every kind. (**Matthew 13:47**)
- When it got full they hauled it up onto the beach and, sitting down, they collected the fine ones into vessels, but the unsuitable they threw away. (**Matthew 13:48**)
- **Shepherds**
- Most truly I say to you, he that does not enter into the sheepfold through the door but climbs up some other place, that one is a thief and a plunderer. (**John 10:1**)
- But he that enters through the door is shepherd of the sheep. (**John 10:2**)
- The doorkeeper opens to this one, and the sheep listen to his voice, and he calls his own sheep by name and leads them out. (**John 10:3**)
- When he has got all his own out, he goes before them, and the sheep follow him, because they know his voice. (**John 10:4**)
- A stranger they will by no means follow but will flee from him, because they do not know the voice of strangers. (**John 10:5**)
- **Jesus** spoke this comparison to them, but they did not know what the things meant that he was speaking to them. (**John 10:6**)
- Therefore **Jesus** said again; Most truly I say to you, I am the door of the sheep. (**John 10:7**)
- All those that have come in place of me are thieves and plunderers, but the sheep have not listened to them. (**John 10:8**)
- I am the door. Whoever enters through me will be saved, and he will go in and out and find pasturage. (**John 10:9**)
- The thief does not come unless it is to steal and slay and destroy. I have come that they might have life and might have it in

- abundance. (**John 10:10**)
- **I am the fine shepherd, the fine shepherd surrenders his soul in behalf of the sheep. (**John 10:11**)**
 - **The hired man, who is no shepherd and to whom the sheep do not belong as his own, beholds the wolf coming and abandons the sheep and flees, and the wolf snatches them and scatters them. (**John 10:12**)**
 - **Because he is a hired man and does not care for the sheep. (**John 10:13**)**
 - **I am the fine shepherd, and I know my sheep and my sheep know me. (**John 10:14**)**
 - **Just as the Father knows me and I know the Father, and I surrender my soul in behalf of the sheep. (**John 10:15**)**
 - **And I have other sheep, which are not of this fold. Those also I must bring, and they will listen to my voice, and they will become one flock, one shepherd. (**John 10:16**)**
 - **This is why the Father loves me, because I surrender my soul, in order, that I may receive it again. (**John 10:17**)**
 - **Farmers**
 - **Then he told them many things by illustrations, saying; Look! A sower went out to sow. (**Matthew 13:3**)**
 - **And as he was sowing, some seeds fell alongside the road, and the birds came and ate them up. (**Matthew 13:4**)**
 - **Others fell upon the rocky places where they did not have much soil, and at once they sprang up because of not having depth of soil. (**Matthew 13:5**)**
 - **But when the sun rose they were scorched, and because of not having root they withered. (**Matthew 13:6**)**
 - **Others, too, fell among the thorns, and the thorns came up and choked them. (**Matthew 13:7**)**

- Still others fell upon the fine soil and they began to yield fruit, this one a hundredfold, that one sixty, the other thirty. (**Matthew 13:8**)

- Let him that has ears listen. (**Matthew 13:9**)

- **Builders**

- Therefore everyone that hears these sayings of mine and does them will be likened to a discreet man, who built his house upon the rock-mass. (**Matthew 7:24**)

- And the rain poured down and the floods came and the winds blew and lashed against that house, but it did not cave in, for it had been founded upon the rock-mass. (**Matthew 7:25**)

- Furthermore, everyone hearing these sayings of mine and not doing them will be likened to a foolish man, who built his house upon the sand. (**Matthew 7:26**)

- And the rain poured down and the floods came and the winds blew and struck against that house and it caved in, and its collapse was great. (**Matthew 7:27**)

- For example, who of you that wants to build a tower does not first sit down and calculate the expense, to see if he has enough to complete it? (**Luke 14:28**)

- Otherwise, he might lay its foundation but not be able to finish it, and all the onlookers might start to ridicule him. (**Luke 14:29**)

- Saying; This man started to build but was not able to finish. (**Luke 14:30**)

- **Merchants**

- Again the kingdom of the heavens is like a traveling merchant seeking fine pearls. (**Matthew 13:45**)

- Upon finding one pearl of high value, away he went and promptly sold all the things he had and bought it. (**Matthew 13:46**)

- **Slaves or masters**

- Then he went on to say also to the disciples; A certain man was rich and he had a steward, and this one was accused to him as handling his goods wastefully. (Luke 16:1)
- So he called him and said to him; What is this I hear about you? Hand in the account of your stewardship, for you can no longer manage the house. (Luke 16:2)
- Then the steward said to himself; What am I to do, seeing that my master will take the stewardship away from me? I am not strong enough to dig, I am ashamed to beg. (Luke 16:3)
- Ah! I know what I shall do, so that, when I am put out of the stewardship, people will receive me into their homes. (Luke 16:4)
- And calling to him each one of the debtors of his master he proceeded to say to the first, How much are you owing my master? (Luke 16:5)
- He said; A hundred bath measures of olive oil. He said to him, Take your written agreement back and sit down and quickly write fifty. (Luke 16:6)
- Next, he said to another one, Now you, how much are you owing? He said; A hundred cor measures of wheat. He said to him, Take your written agreement back and write eighty. (Luke 16:7)
- And his master commended the steward, though unrighteous, because he acted with practical wisdom, for the sons of this system of things are wiser in a practical way toward their own generation than the sons of the light are. (Luke 16:8)
- Also, I say to you, make friends for yourselves by means of the unrighteous riches, so that, when such fail, they may receive you into the everlasting dwelling places. (Luke 16:9)
- **Housewives**
- Another illustration he spoke to them; The kingdom of the heavens is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three large measures of flour, until the whole mass was fermented. (Matthew 13:33)

- Or what woman with ten drachma coins, if she loses one drachma coin, does not light a lamp and sweep her house and search carefully until she finds it? (**Luke 15:8**)
- **Or anyone else**
- Observe intently the birds of heaven, because they do not sow seed or reap or gather into storehouses, still your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not worth more than they are? (**Matthew 6:26**)
- Who of you by being anxious can add one cubit to his life span? (**Matthew 6:27**)
- Also, on the matter of clothing, why are you anxious? Take a lesson from the lilies of the field, how they are growing, they do not toil, nor do they spin. (**Matthew 6:28**)
- But I say to you that not even Solomon in all his glory was arrayed as one of these. (**Matthew 6:29**)
- If, now, God thus clothes the vegetation of the field, which is here today and tomorrow is thrown into the oven, will he not much rather clothe you, you with little faith? (**Matthew 6:30**)
- Simple things, like bread, water, salt, wineskins, old garments, were used as symbols of things of great importance, even as they were so used in the Hebrew Scriptures.
- Our forefathers ate the manna in the wilderness, just as it is written: He gave them bread from heaven to eat. (**John 6:31**)
- Hence **Jesus** said to them; Most truly I say to you, Moses did not give you the bread from heaven, but my Father does give you the true bread from heaven. (**John 6:32**)
- For the bread of God is the one who comes down from heaven and gives life to the world. (**John 6:33**)
- Therefore they said to him; Lord, always give us this bread. (**John 6:34**)
- **Jesus** said to them; I am the bread of life. He that comes to me

- will not get hungry at all, and he that exercises faith in me will never get thirsty at all. ([John 6:35](#))
- **I am the living bread that came down from heaven, if anyone eats of this bread he will live forever, and, for a fact, the bread that I shall give is my flesh in behalf of the life of the world. ([John 6:51](#))**
 - **In answer **Jesus** said to her; Everyone drinking from this water will get thirsty again. ([John 4:13](#))**
 - **Whoever drinks from the water that I will give him will never get thirsty at all, but the water that I will give him will become in him a fountain of water bubbling up to impart everlasting life. ([John 4:14](#))**
 - **You are the salt of the earth, but if the salt loses its strength, how will its saltiness be restored? It is no longer usable for anything but to be thrown outside to be trampled on by men. ([Matthew 5:13](#))**
 - **Further, he went on to give an illustration to them; No one cuts a patch from a new outer garment and sews it onto an old outer garment. But if he does, then both the new patch tears away and the patch from the new garment does not match the old. ([Luke 5:36](#))**
 - **Moreover, no one puts new wine into old wineskins, but if he does, then the new wine will burst the wineskins, and it will be spilled out and the wineskins will be ruined. ([Luke 5:37](#))**
 - **But new wine must be put into new wineskins. ([Luke 5:38](#))**
 - **No one that has drunk old wine wants new, for he says; The old is nice. ([Luke 5:39](#))**
 - **His logic, often expressed through analogies, cleared away misguided objections, and put matters in their proper perspective.**
 - **Here the Pharisees and Sadducees approached him and, to tempt him, they asked him to display to them a sign from heaven. ([Matthew 16:1](#))**
 - **In reply he said to them; When evening falls you are accustomed**

- to say; It will be fair weather, for the sky is fire-red. (**Matthew 16:2**)
- **And at morning, It will be wintry, rainy weather today, for the sky is fire-red, but gloomy-looking. You know how to interpret the appearance of the sky, but the signs of the times you cannot interpret. (**Matthew 16:3**)**
 - **Indeed, which father is there among you who, if his son asks for a fish, will perhaps hand him a serpent instead of a fish? (**Luke 11:11**)**
 - **Or if he also asks for an egg, will hand him a scorpion? (**Luke 11:12**)**
 - **Therefore, if you, although being wicked, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more so will the Father in heaven give Holy Spirit to those asking him! (**Luke 11:13**)**
 - **Later he was expelling a dumb demon. After the demon came out, the dumb man spoke. And the crowds marveled. (**Luke 11:14**)**
 - **But certain ones of them said; He expels the demons by means of Beelzebub the ruler of the demons. (**Luke 11:15**)**
 - **However, others, to tempt him, began seeking a sign out of heaven from him. (**Luke 11:16**)**
 - **Knowing their imaginations he said to them; Every kingdom divided against itself comes to desolation, and a house divided against itself falls. (**Luke 11:17**)**
 - **So if Satan is also divided against himself, how will his kingdom stand? Because you say I expel the demons by means of Beelzebub. (**Luke 11:18**)**
 - **If it is by means of Beelzebub I expel the demons, by whom do your sons expel them? Because of this they will be judges of you. (**Luke 11:19**)**
 - **But if it is by means of God's finger I expel the demons, the kingdom of God has really overtaken you. (**Luke 11:20**)**

- **When a strong man, well armed, guards his palace, his belongings continue in peace. (Luke 11:21)**
- **But when someone stronger than he is comes against him and conquers him, he takes away his full armament in which he was trusting, and he divides out the things he despoiled him of. (Luke 11:22)**
- **And on an occasion when he went into the house of a certain one of the rulers of the Pharisees on the Sabbath to eat a meal, they were closely watching him. (Luke 14:1)**
- **And, look! There was before him a certain man who had dropsy. (Luke 14:2)**
- **So in response Jesus spoke to those versed in the Law and to the Pharisees, saying; Is it lawful on the Sabbath to cure or not? (Luke 14:3)**
- **But they kept silent. With that he took hold of the man, healed him and sent him away. (Luke 14:4)**
- **And he said to them; Who of you, if his son or bull falls into a well, will not immediately pull him out on the Sabbath day? (Luke 14:5)**
- **And they were not able to answer back on these things. (Luke 14:6)**
- **He aimed his message primarily at men's hearts, using penetrating questions to cause them to think, arrive at their own conclusions, examine their motives, and make decisions.**
- **Now the disciples crossed to the other side and forgot to take loaves along. (Matthew 16:5)**
- **Jesus said to them; Keep your eyes open and watch out for the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees. (Matthew 16:6)**
- **So they began to reason among themselves, saying; We did not take any loaves along. (Matthew 16:7)**
- **Knowing this, Jesus said; Why are you doing this reasoning among yourselves, because you have no loaves, you with little**

faith? (**Matthew 16:8**)

- Do you not yet see the point, or do you not remember the five loaves in the case of the five thousand and how many baskets you took up? (**Matthew 16:9**)
- Or the seven loaves in the case of the four thousand and how many provision baskets you took up? (**Matthew 16:10**)
- How is it you do not discern that I did not talk to you about loaves? But watch out for the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees. (**Matthew 16:11**)
- Then they grasped that he said to watch out, not for the leaven of the loaves, but for the teaching of the Pharisees and Sadducees. (**Matthew 16:12**)
- Now when he had come into the parts of Caesarea Philippi, **Jesus** went asking his disciples; Who are men saying the Son of man is? (**Matthew 16:13**)
- They said; Some say John the Baptist, others Elijah, still others Jeremiah or one of the prophets. (**Matthew 16:14**)
- He said to them; You, though, who do you say I am? (**Matthew 16:15**)
- In answer Simon Peter said; You are the Christ, the Son of the living God. (**Matthew 16:16**)
- After they arrived in Capernaum the men collecting the two drachmas tax approached Peter and said; Does your teacher not pay the two drachmas tax? (**Matthew 17:24**)
- He said, Yes. However, when he entered the house **Jesus** got ahead of him by saying; What do you think, Simon? From whom do the kings of the earth receive duties or head tax? From their sons or from the strangers? (**Matthew 17:25**)
- When he said; From the strangers, **Jesus** said to him; Really, then, the sons are tax-free. (**Matthew 17:26**)
- But that we do not cause them to stumble, you go to the sea, cast a fishhook, and take the first fish coming up and, when you

- open its mouth, you will find a stater coin. Take that and give it to them for me and you. ([Matthew 17:27](#))
- Then **Jesus** said to him; Return your sword to its place, for all those who take the sword will perish by the sword. ([Matthew 26:52](#))
 - Or do you think that I cannot appeal to my Father to supply me at this moment more than twelve legions of angels? ([Matthew 26:53](#))
 - In that case, how would the Scriptures be fulfilled that it must take place this way? ([Matthew 26:54](#))
 - Once again he entered into a synagogue, and a man was there with a dried-up hand. ([Mark 3:1](#))
 - So they were watching him closely to see whether he would cure the man on the Sabbath, in order, that they might accuse him. ([Mark 3:2](#))
 - And he said to the man with the withered hand; Get up and come to the center. ([Mark 3:3](#))
 - Next he said to them; Is it lawful on the Sabbath to do a good deed or to do a bad deed, to save or to kill a soul? But they kept silent. ([Mark 3:4](#))
 - And after looking around upon them with indignation, being thoroughly grieved at the insensibility of their hearts, he said to the man; Stretch out your hand. And he stretched it out, and his hand was restored. ([Mark 3:5](#))
 - Now, look! A certain man versed in the Law rose up, to test him out, and said; Teacher, by doing what shall I inherit everlasting life? ([Luke 10:25](#))
 - He said to him; What is written in the Law? How do you read? ([Luke 10:26](#))
 - In answer he said; You must love Yehowah your God with your whole heart and with your whole soul and with your whole strength and with your whole mind, and, your neighbor as yourself. ([Luke 10:27](#))

- He said to him; You answered correctly. Keep on doing this and you will get life. (**Luke 10:28**)
- But, wanting to prove himself righteous, the man said to **Jesus**; Who really is my neighbor? (**Luke 10:29**)
- In reply **Jesus** said; A certain man was going down from Jerusalem to Jericho and fell among robbers, who both stripped him and inflicted blows, and went off, leaving him half-dead. (**Luke 10:30**)
- Now, by coincidence, a certain priest was going down over that road, but, when he saw him, he went by on the opposite side. (**Luke 10:31**)
- Likewise, a Levite also, when he got down to the place and saw him, went by on the opposite side. (**Luke 10:32**)
- But a certain Samaritan traveling the road came upon him and, at seeing him, he was moved with pity. (**Luke 10:33**)
- So he approached him and bound up his wounds, pouring oil and wine upon them. Then he mounted him upon his own beast and brought him to an inn and took care of him. (**Luke 10:34**)
- And the next day he took out two denarii, gave them to the innkeeper, and said; Take care of him, and whatever you spend besides this, I will repay you when I come back here. (**Luke 10:35**)
- Who of these three seems to you to have made himself neighbor to the man that fell among the robbers? (**Luke 10:36**)
- He said; The one that acted mercifully toward him. **Jesus** then said to him; Go your way and be doing the same yourself. (**Luke 10:37**)
- **Jesus**, however, said to Peter; Put the sword into its sheath. The cup that the Father has given me, should I not by all means drink it? (**John 18:11**)

- **He did not strive to win over the masses, but endeavored to awaken the hearts of those sincerely hungering for truth and righteousness.**
- **Happy are those conscious of their spiritual need, since the kingdom of the heavens belongs to them. (Matthew 5:3)**
- **Happy are those hungering and thirsting for righteousness, since they will be filled. (Matthew 5:6)**
- **So the disciples came up and said to him; Why is it you speak to them by the use of illustrations? (Matthew 13:10)**
- **In reply he said; To you it is granted to understand the sacred secrets of the kingdom of the heavens, but to those people it is not granted. (Matthew 13:11)**
- **For whoever has, more will be given him and he will be made to abound, but whoever does not have, even what he has will be taken from him. (Matthew 13:12)**
- **This is why I speak to them by the use of illustrations, because, looking, they look in vain, and hearing, they hear in vain, neither do they get the sense of it. (Matthew 13:13)**
- **And toward them the prophecy of Isaiah is having fulfillment, which says, By hearing, you will hear but by no means get the sense of it, and, looking, you will look but by no means see. (Matthew 13:14)**
- **For the heart of this people has grown unreceptive, and with their ears they have heard without response, and they have shut their eyes, that they might never see with their eyes and hear with their ears and get the sense of it with their hearts and turn back, and I heal them. (Matthew 13:15)**
- **Though considerate of the limited understanding of his audience and even of his disciples.**
- **So with many illustrations of that sort he would speak the word to them, as far as they were able to listen. (Mark 4:33)**
- **And though using discernment in how much information to give them.**

- **Nevertheless, I have spoken these things to you that, when the hour for them arrives, you may remember I told them to you. These things, however, I did not tell you at first, because I was with you. (John 16:4)**
- **I have many things yet to say to you, but you are not able to bear them at present. (John 16:12)**
- **He never watered down God's message in an effort to gain popularity or curry favor. His speech was straightforward, even blunt at times.**
- **Just let your word Yes mean Yes, your No, No! For what is in excess of these is from the wicked one. (Matthew 5:37)**
- **When he had spoken this, a Pharisee requested him to dine with him. So he went in and reclined at the table. (Luke 11:37)**
- **However, the Pharisee was surprised at seeing that he did not first wash before the dinner. (Luke 11:38)**
- **But the Lord said to him; Now you Pharisees, you cleanse the outside of the cup and dish, but the inside of you is full of plunder and wickedness. (Luke 11:39)**
- **Unreasonable persons! He that made the outside made also the inside, did he not? (Luke 11:40)**
- **Nevertheless, give as gifts of mercy the things that are inside, and, look! all other things are clean about you. (Luke 11:41)**
- **But woe to you Pharisees, because you give the tenth of the mint and the rue and of every other vegetable, but you pass by the justice and the love of God! These things you were under obligation to do, but those other things not to omit. (Luke 11:42)**
- **Woe to you Pharisees, because you love the front seats in the synagogues and the greetings in the marketplaces! (Luke 11:43)**
- **Woe to you, because you are as those memorial tombs which are not in evidence, so that men walk upon them and do not know it! (Luke 11:44)**

- In answer a certain one of those versed in the Law said to him; Teacher, in saying these things you also insult us. ([Luke 11:45](#))
- Then he said; Woe also to you who are versed in the Law, because you load men with loads hard to be borne, but you yourselves do not touch the loads with one of your fingers! ([Luke 11:46](#))
- Woe to you, because you build the memorial tombs of the prophets, but your forefathers killed them! ([Luke 11:47](#))
- Certainly you are witnesses of the deeds of your forefathers and yet you give consent to them, because these killed the prophets but you are building their tombs. ([Luke 11:48](#))
- On this account the wisdom of God also said; I will send forth to them prophets and apostles, and they will kill and persecute some of them. ([Luke 11:49](#))
- So that the blood of all the prophets spilled from the founding of the world may be required from this generation. ([Luke 11:50](#))
- From the blood of Abel down to the blood of Zechariah, who was slain between the altar and the house. Yes, I tell you, it will be required from this generation. ([Luke 11:51](#))
- Woe to you who are versed in the Law, because you took away the key of knowledge; You yourselves did not go in, and those going in you hindered! ([Luke 11:52](#))
- Moses gave you the Law, did he not? But not one of you obeys the Law. Why are you seeking to kill me? ([John 7:19](#))
- Who of you convicts me of sin? If I speak truth, why is it you do not believe me? ([John 8:46](#))
- He that is from God listens to the sayings of God. This is why you do not listen, because you are not from God. ([John 8:47](#))
- The theme of his message was. **Repent**, for the kingdom of the heavens has drawn near.
- From that time on **Jesus** commenced preaching and saying; **Repent**, you people, for the kingdom of the heavens has drawn

near. ([Matthew 4:17](#))

- **As did Yehowah's prophets of earlier times, he plainly told the people of their revolt, and the house of Jacob of their sins.**
- **Call out full-throated. Do not hold back. Raise your voice just like a horn, and tell my people their revolt, and the house of Jacob their sins. ([Isaiah 58:1](#))**
- **What do you think? A man had two children. Going up to the first, he said; Child, go work today in the vineyard. ([Matthew 21:28](#))**
- **In answer this one said; I will, sir, but did not go out. ([Matthew 21:29](#))**
- **Approaching the second, he said the same. In reply this one said; I will not. Afterwards he felt regret and went out. ([Matthew 21:30](#))**
- **Which of the two did the will of his father? They said; The latter. **Jesus** said to them; Truly I say to you that the tax collectors and the harlots are going ahead of you into the kingdom of God. ([Matthew 21:31](#))**
- **For John came to you in a way of righteousness, but you did not believe him. However, the tax collectors and the harlots believed him, and you, although you saw this, did not feel regret afterwards so as to believe him. ([Matthew 21:32](#))**
- **Therefore I said to you, you will die in your sins. For if you do not believe that I am he, you will die in your sins. ([John 8:24](#))**
- **Pointing them to the narrow gate and the cramped road that would lead them back to God's favor and life.**
- **Go in through the narrow gate, because broad and spacious is the road leading off into destruction, and many are the ones going in through it. ([Matthew 7:13](#))**
- **Whereas narrow is the gate and cramped the road leading off into life, and few are the ones finding it. ([Matthew 7:14](#))**

•• **Leader And Commander**

- **Jesus demonstrated his qualifications as, a leader and commander as well as, a witness to the national groups.**
- **Incline your ear and come to me. Listen, and your soul will keep alive, and I shall readily conclude with you people an indefinitely lasting covenant respecting the loving-kindnesses to David that are faithful. (Isaiah 55:3)**
- **Look! As a witness to the national groups I have given him, as a leader and commander to the national groups. (Isaiah 55:4)**
- **Neither be called leaders, for your Leader is one, the Christ. (Matthew 23:10)**
- **Do you not believe that I am in union with the Father and the Father is in union with me? The things I say to you men I do not speak of my own originality, but the Father who remains in union with me is doing his works. (John 14:10)**
- **If you ask anything in my name, I will do it. (John 14:14)**
- **In the sight of God, who preserves all things alive, and of Christ Jesus, who as a witness made the fine public declaration before Pontius Pilate, I give you orders (1 Timothy 6:13)**
- **That you observe the commandment in a spotless and irreprehensible way until the manifestation of our Lord Jesus Christ. (1 Timothy 6:14)**
- **When the time came for it, several months after beginning his ministry, he went to certain people already known to him and gave them the invitation. Be my follower. Men abandoned fishing businesses and tax office employment to respond without hesitation.**
- **Walking alongside the sea of Galilee he saw two brothers, Simon who is called Peter and Andrew his brother, letting down a fishing net into the sea, for they were fishers. (Matthew 4:18)**
- **And he said to them; Come after me, and I will make you fishers of men. (Matthew 4:19)**
- **At once abandoning the nets, they followed him. (Matthew 4:20)**

- **Going on also from there he saw two others who were brothers, James the son of Zebedee and John his brother, in the boat with Zebedee their father, mending their nets, and he called them. (Matthew 4:21)**
- **At once leaving the boat and their father, they followed him. (Matthew 4:22)**
- **Now after these things he went out and beheld a tax collector named Levi sitting at the tax office, and he said to him; Be my follower. (Luke 5:27)**
- **And leaving everything behind he rose up and went following him. (Luke 5:28)**
- **Your people will offer themselves willingly on the day of your military force. In the splendors of holiness, from the womb of the dawn, you have your company of young men just like dewdrops. (Psalms 110:3)**
- **Women contributed time, effort, and material possessions to supply the needs of Jesus and his followers.**
- **There were also women viewing from a distance, among them Mary Magdalene as well as Mary the mother of James the Less and of Joses, and Salome. (Mark 15:40)**
- **Who used to accompany him and minister to him when he was in Galilee, and many other women who had come up together with him to Jerusalem. (Mark 15:41)**
- **Shortly afterwards he went journeying from city to city and from village to village, preaching and declaring the Good News of the kingdom of God. And the twelve were with him. (Luke 8:1)**
- **And certain women that had been cured of wicked spirits and sicknesses, Mary the so-called Magdalene, from whom seven demons had come out. (Luke 8:2)**
- **And Joanna the wife of Chuza, Herod's man in charge, and Susanna and many other women, who were ministering to them from their belongings. (Luke 8:3)**

- **This small group formed the nucleus of what would become a new nation, Spiritual Israel.**
- **It is to you, therefore, that he is precious, because you are believers, but to those not believing, the identical stone that the builders rejected has become the head of the corner. (1 Peter 2:7)**
- **And, a stone of stumbling and a rock-mass of offense. These are stumbling because they are disobedient to the word. To this very end they were also appointed. (1 Peter 2:8)**
- **But you are, a chosen race, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a people for special possession, that you should declare abroad the excellencies, of the one that called you out of darkness into his wonderful light. (1 Peter 2:9)**
- **For you were once not a people, but are now God's people; You were those who had not been shown mercy, but are now those who have been shown mercy. (1 Peter 2:10)**
- **Jesus spent an entire night praying for his Father's guidance before selecting 12 apostles, who, if faithful, would become pillars in that new nation, like the 12 sons of Jacob in fleshly Israel.**
- **In the progress of these days he went out into the mountain to pray, and he continued the whole night in prayer to God. (Luke 6:12)**
- **But when it became day he called his disciples to him and chose from among them twelve, whom he also named apostles. (Luke 6:13)**
- **Simon, whom he also named Peter, and Andrew his brother, and James and John, and Philip and Bartholomew. (Luke 6:14)**
- **And Matthew and Thomas, and James the son of Alphaeus, and Simon who is called the zealous one. (Luke 6:15)**
- **And Judas the son of James, and Judas Iscariot, who turned traitor. (Luke 6:16)**
- **And you have been built up upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, while Christ Jesus himself is the foundation**

cornerstone. (**Ephesians 2:20**)

- The wall of the city also had twelve foundation stones, and on them the twelve names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb. (**Revelation 21:14**)
- As Moses had 70 men associated with him as representatives of the nation, **Jesus** later assigned 70 more disciples to the ministry.
- In turn Yehowah said to Moses; Gather for me seventy men of the older men of Israel, whom you do know that they are older men of the people and officers of theirs, and you must take them to the tent of meeting, and they must station themselves there with you. (**Numbers 11:16**)
- And I shall have to come down and speak with you there, and I shall have to take away some of the spirit that is upon you and place it upon them, and they will have to help you in carrying the load of the people that you may not carry it, just you alone. (**Numbers 11:17**)
- After these things the Lord designated seventy others and sent them forth by twos in advance of him into every city and place to which he himself was going to come. (**Luke 10:1**)
- Thereafter **Jesus** concentrated special attention on these disciples in his teaching and instruction, even the Sermon on the Mount being delivered principally for them, as its contents reveal.
- When he saw the crowds he went up into the mountain, and after he sat down his disciples came to him. (**Matthew 5:1**)
- And he opened his mouth and began teaching them, saying; (**Matthew 5:2**)
- So the disciples came up and said to him; Why is it you speak to them by the use of illustrations? (**Matthew 13:10**)
- In reply he said; To you it is granted to understand the sacred secrets of the kingdom of the heavens, but to those people it is not granted. (**Matthew 13:11**)
- Indeed, without an illustration he would not speak to them, but privately to his disciples he would explain all things. (**Mark 4:34**)

- Now when he had entered a house away from the crowd, his disciples began to question him respecting the illustration. (**Mark 7:17**)
- He fully accepted the responsibilities of his headship, took the lead in every respect.
- Neither be called leaders, for your Leader is one, the Christ. (**Matthew 23:10**)
- Now they were advancing on the road up to Jerusalem, and **Jesus** was going in front of them, and they felt amazement, but those who followed began to fear. Once again he took the twelve aside and started to tell them these things destined to befall him. (**Mark 10:32**)
- Assigned his disciples responsibilities and tasks in addition to their preaching work.
- So he sent forth messengers in advance of him. And they went their way and entered into a village of Samaritans, to make preparation for him. (**Luke 9:52**)
- And when he got near to Bethphage and Bethany at the mountain called Mount of Olives, he sent forth two of the disciples. (**Luke 19:29**)
- Saying; Go into the village that is within sight of you, and in it after you pass in you will find a colt tied, on which none of mankind ever sat. Loose it and bring it. (**Luke 19:30**)
- But if anyone asks you, why is it you are loosing it? You must speak in this way; The Lord needs it. (**Luke 19:31**)
- So those who were sent forth departed and found it just as he said to them. (**Luke 19:32**)
- But as they were loosing the colt the owners of it said to them; Why are you loosing the colt? (**Luke 19:33**)
- They said; The Lord needs it. (**Luke 19:34**)
- And they led it to **Jesus**, and they threw their outer garments

upon the colt and set Jesus upon it. (**Luke 19:35**)

- When, now, the Lord became aware that the Pharisees had heard that **Jesus** was making and baptizing more disciples than John. (**John 4:1**)
- Although, indeed, **Jesus** himself did no baptizing but his disciples did. (**John 4:2**)
- He left Judea and departed again for Galilee. (**John 4:3**)
- But it was necessary for him to go through Samaria. (**John 4:4**)
- Accordingly he came to a city of Samaria called Sychar near the field that Jacob gave to Joseph his son. (**John 4:5**)
- In fact, Jacob's fountain was there. Now **Jesus**, tired out from the journey, was sitting at the fountain just as he was. The hour was about the sixth. (**John 4:6**)
- A woman of Samaria came to draw water. **Jesus** said to her; Give me a drink. (**John 4:7**)
- For his disciples had gone off into the city to buy foodstuffs. (**John 4:8**)
- But Judas Iscariot, one of his disciples, who was about to betray him, said. (**John 12:4**)
- Why was it this perfumed oil was not sold for three hundred denarii and given to the poor people? (**John 12:5**)
- He said this, though, not because he was concerned about the poor, but because he was a thief and had the money box and used to carry off the monies put in it. (**John 12:6**)
- Some, in fact, were imagining, since Judas was holding the money box, that **Jesus** was telling him; Buy what things we need for the festival, or that he should give something to the poor. (**John 13:29**)
- And he told his disciples to have a little boat continually at his service so that the crowd might not press upon him. (**Mark 3:9**)

- **Now on the first day of unfermented cakes, when they customarily sacrificed the Passover victim, his disciples said to him; Where do you want us to go and prepare for you to eat the Passover? (Mark 14:12)**
- **With that he sent forth two of his disciples and said to them; Go into the city, and a man carrying an earthenware vessel of water will encounter you. Follow him. (Mark 14:13)**
- **And wherever he goes inside say to the householder; The Teacher says; Where is the guest room for me where I may eat the Passover with my disciples? (Mark 14:14)**
- **And he will show you a large upper room, furnished in preparation, and there prepare for us. (Mark 14:15)**
- **So the disciples went out, and they entered the city and found it just as he said to them, and they prepared for the Passover. (Mark 14:16)**
- **Encouraged and reproved.**
- **For the Father himself has affection for you, because you have had affection for me and have believed that I came out as the Father's representative. (John 16:27)**
- **Then the seventy returned with joy, saying; Lord, even the demons are made subject to us by the use of your name. (Luke 10:17)**
- **At that he said to them; I began to behold Satan already fallen like lightning from heaven. (Luke 10:18)**
- **Look! I have given you the authority to trample underfoot serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy, and nothing will by any means do you hurt. (Luke 10:19)**
- **Nevertheless, do not rejoice over this, that the spirits are made subject to you, but rejoice because your names have been inscribed in the heavens. (Luke 10:20)**
- **In that very hour he became overjoyed in the Holy Spirit and said; I publicly praise you, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because you have carefully hidden these things from wise and**

intellectual ones, and have revealed them to babes. Yes, O Father, because to do thus came to be the way approved by you. **(Luke 10:21)**

- **All things have been delivered to me by my Father, and who the Son is no one knows but the Father, and who the Father is, no one knows but the Son, and he to whom the Son is willing to reveal him. (Luke 10:22)**
- **With that he turned to the disciples by themselves and said; Happy are the eyes that behold the things you are beholding. (Luke 10:23)**
- **For I say to you; Many prophets and kings desired to see the things you are beholding, but did not see them, and to hear the things you are hearing, but did not hear them. (Luke 10:24)**
- **At this Peter took him aside and commenced rebuking him, saying; Be kind to yourself, Lord; You will not have this destiny at all. (Matthew 16:22)**
- **But, turning his back, he said to Peter; Get behind me, Satan! You are a stumbling block to me, because you think, not God's thoughts, but those of men. (Matthew 16:23)**
- **He was a commander, and the chief of his commands was that they love one another even as he had loved them.**
- **If you observe my commandments, you will remain in my love, just as I have observed the commandments of the Father and remain in his love. (John 15:10)**
- **These things I have spoken to you, that my joy may be in you and your joy may be made full. (John 15:11)**
- **This is my commandment, that you love one another just as I have loved you. (John 15:12)**
- **No one has love greater than this, that someone should surrender his soul in behalf of his friends. (John 15:13)**
- **You are my friends if you do what I am commanding you. (John 15:14)**

- **He was able to control crowds numbering into the thousands.**
- **And he instructed all the people to recline by companies on the green grass. (Mark 6:39)**
- **And they laid themselves down in groups of a hundred and of fifty. (Mark 6:40)**
- **Taking now the five loaves and the two fishes he looked up to heaven and said a blessing, and broke the loaves up and began giving them to the disciples, that these might place them before the people, and he divided up the two fishes for all. (Mark 6:41)**
- **So they all ate and were satisfied. (Mark 6:42)**
- **And they took up fragments, twelve baskets full, aside from the fishes. (Mark 6:43)**
- **Furthermore, those who ate of the loaves were five thousand men. (Mark 6:44)**
- **And, without delay, he compelled his disciples to board the boat and go on ahead to the opposite shore toward Bethsaida, while he himself dismissed the crowd. (Mark 6:45)**
- **But after saying good-bye to them he went off into a mountain to pray. (Mark 6:46)**
- **The steady, helpful training he gave his disciples, men for the most part of humble position and education, was extremely effective.**
- **So he summoned his twelve disciples and gave them authority over unclean spirits, in order to expel these and to cure every sort of disease and every sort of infirmity. (Matthew 10:1)**
- **The book of the history of Jesus Christ, son of David, son of Abraham. (Matthew 1:1)**
- **Now he summoned the twelve, and he initiated sending them out two by two, and he began to give them authority over the unclean spirits. (Mark 6:7)**
- **Also, he gave them orders to carry nothing for the trip except a staff alone, no bread, no food pouch, no copper money in their**

- girdle purses. (Mark 6:8)**
- **But to bind on sandals, and not to wear two undergarments. (Mark 6:9)**
 - **Further, he said to them; Wherever you enter into a home, stay there until you go out of that place. (Mark 6:10)**
 - **And wherever a place will not receive you nor hear you, on going out from there shake off the dirt that is beneath your feet for a witness to them. (Mark 6:11)**
 - **So they set out and preached in order, that people might repent. (Mark 6:12)**
 - **And they would expel many demons and grease many sickly people with oil and cure them. (Mark 6:13)**
 - **Shortly afterwards he went journeying from city to city and from village to village, preaching and declaring the Good News of the kingdom of God. And the twelve were with him. (Luke 8:1)**
 - **Later, men of high station and learning were to wonder at the apostles forceful, confident speech, and as fishers of men, they enjoyed amazing results persons by the thousands responded to their preaching.**
 - **And he said to them; Come after me, and I will make you fishers of men. (Matthew 4:19)**
 - **Now when they heard this they were stabbed to the heart, and they said to Peter and the rest of the apostles; Men, brothers, what shall we do? (Acts of Apostles 2:37)**
 - **Therefore those who embraced his word heartily were baptized, and on that day about three thousand souls were added. (Acts of Apostles 2:41)**
 - **However, many of those who had listened to the speech believed, and the number of the men became about five thousand. (Acts of Apostles 4:4)**
 - **Now when they beheld the outspokenness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were men unlettered and ordinary, they got**

- to wondering. And they began to recognize about them that they used to be with **Jesus**. (**Acts of Apostles 4:13**)
- **Consequently the word of God went on growing, and the number of the disciples kept multiplying in Jerusalem very much, and a great crowd of priests began to be obedient to the faith. (**Acts of Apostles 6:7**)**
 - **Their grasp of Bible principles, carefully implanted in their hearts by **Jesus**, enabled them to be real shepherds of the flock in later years.**
 - **Therefore, to the older men among you I give this exhortation, for I too am an older man with them and a witness of the sufferings of the Christ, a sharer even of the glory that is to be revealed. (**1 Peter 5:1**)**
 - **Shepherd the flock of God in your care, not under compulsion, but willingly, neither for love of dishonest gain, but eagerly. (**1 Peter 5:2**)**
 - **Neither as lording it over those who are God's inheritance, but becoming examples to the flock. (**1 Peter 5:3**)**
 - **And when the chief shepherd has been made manifest, you will receive the unfadable crown of glory. (**1 Peter 5:4**)**
 - **Thus, **Jesus**, in the short span of three and a half years, laid the sound foundation for a unified international congregation with thousands of members drawn from many races.**

•• Able Provider And Righteous Judge

- **That his rule would bring prosperity surpassing that of Solomon's was evident from his ability to direct the fishing operations of his disciples with overwhelming success.**
- **When he ceased speaking, he said to Simon; Pull out to where it is deep, and you men let down your nets for a catch. (**Luke 5:4**)**
- **But Simon in reply said; Instructor, for a whole night we toiled and took nothing, but at your bidding I will lower the nets. (**Luke 5:5**)**
- **Well, when they did this, they enclosed a great multitude of fish.**

In fact, their nets began ripping apart. (Luke 5:6)

- So they motioned to their partners in the other boat to come and assist them, and they did come, and they filled both boats, so that these began to sink. (Luke 5:7)
- Seeing this, Simon Peter fell down at the knees of **Jesus**, saying; Depart from me, because I am a sinful man, Lord. (Luke 5:8)
- For at the catch of fish which they took up astonishment overwhelmed him and all those with him. (Luke 5:9)
- However, just as it was getting to be morning, **Jesus** stood on the beach, but the disciples did not, of course, discern that it was Jesus. (John 21:4)
- Then **Jesus** said to them; Young children, you do not have anything to eat, do you? They answered No! To him. (John 21:5)
- He said to them; Cast the net on the right side of the boat and you will find some. Then they cast it, but they were no longer able to draw it in because of the multitude of the fishes. (John 21:6)
- Therefore that disciple whom **Jesus** used to love said to Peter; It is the Lord! Hence Simon Peter, upon hearing that it was the Lord, girded about himself his top garment, for he was naked, and plunged into the sea. (John 21:7)
- But the other disciples came in the little boat, for they were not a long way from land, only about three hundred feet away, dragging the net of fishes. (John 21:8)
- However, when they disembarked onto land they beheld lying there a charcoal fire and fish lying upon it and bread. (John 21:9)
- **Jesus** said to them; Bring some of the fish you just now caught. (John 21:10)
- Simon Peter, therefore, went on board and drew the net to land full of big fishes, one hundred and fifty-three of them. But although there were so many the net did not burst. (John 21:11)

- **The feeding of thousands of persons by this man born in Bethlehem, meaning, **House of Bread**, as well as his converting water into fine wine, was a small foretaste of the future banquet that God's Messianic Kingdom would provide for all the peoples.**
- **And Yehowah of armies will certainly make for all the peoples, in this mountain, a banquet of well-oiled dishes, a banquet of wine kept on the dregs, of well-oiled dishes filled with marrow, of wine kept on the dregs, filtered. (Isaiah 25:6)**
- **On hearing these things a certain one of the fellow guests said to him; Happy is he who eats bread in the kingdom of God. (Luke 14:15)**
- **His rule not only would end poverty and hunger but would even result in the swallowing up of death.**
- **And in this mountain he will certainly swallow up the face of the envelopment that is enveloping over all the peoples, and the woven work that is interwoven upon all the nations. (Isaiah 25:7)**
- **He will actually swallow up death forever, and the Sovereign Lord Yehowah will certainly wipe the tears from all faces. And the reproach of his people he will take away from all the earth, for Yehowah himself has spoken it. (Isaiah 25:8)**
- **There was every reason, as well, to trust in the justice and righteous judgment his government would bring, in harmony with the Messianic prophecies.**
- **And there will be enjoyment by him in the fear of Yehowah. And he will not judge by any mere appearance to his eyes, nor reprove simply according to the thing heard by his ears. (Isaiah 11:3)**
- **And with righteousness he must judge the lowly ones, and with uprightness he must give reproof in behalf of the meek ones of the earth. And he must strike the earth with the rod of his mouth, and with the spirit of his lips he will put the wicked one to death. (Isaiah 11:4)**
- **And righteousness must prove to be the belt of his hips, and faithfulness the belt of his loins. (Isaiah 11:5)**

- **Look! A king will reign for righteousness itself, and as respects princes, they will rule as princes for justice itself. (Isaiah 32:1)**
- **And each one must prove to be like a hiding place from the wind and a place of concealment from the rainstorm, like streams of water in a waterless country, like the shadow of a heavy crag in an exhausted land. (Isaiah 32:2)**
- **Look! My servant, on whom I keep fast hold! My chosen one, whom my soul has approved! I have put my spirit in him. Justice to the nations is what he will bring forth. (Isaiah 42:1)**
- **He showed the utmost respect for law, particularly that of his God and Father, but also for that of the superior authorities allowed to operate on earth in the form of secular governments.**
- **Let every soul be in subjection to the superior authorities, for there is no authority except by God, the existing authorities stand placed in their relative positions by God. (Romans 13:1)**
- **Do not think I came to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I came, not to destroy, but to fulfill. (Matthew 5:17)**
- **For truly I say to you that sooner would heaven and earth pass away than for one smallest letter or one particle of a letter to pass away from the Law by any means and not all things take place. (Matthew 5:18)**
- **Whoever, therefore, breaks one of these least commandments and teaches mankind to that effect, he will be called least in relation to the kingdom of the heavens. As for anyone who does them and teaches them, this one will be called great in relation to the kingdom of the heavens. (Matthew 5:19)**
- **Tell us, therefore, What do you think? Is it lawful to pay head tax to Caesar or not? (Matthew 22:17)**
- **But Jesus, knowing their wickedness, said; Why do you put me to the test, hypocrites? (Matthew 22:18)**
- **Show me the head tax coin. They brought him a denarius. (Matthew 22:19)**

- **And he said to them; Whose image and inscription is this? (Matthew 22:20)**
- **They said; Caesar's. Then he said to them; Pay back, therefore, Caesar's things to Caesar, but God's things to God. (Matthew 22:21)**
- **Jesus answered; My kingdom is no part of this world. If my kingdom were part of this world, my attendants would have fought that I should not be delivered up to the Jews. But, as it is, my kingdom is not from this source. (John 18:36)**
- **He rejected the effort to inject him into the current political scene by making him king through popular acclaim.**
- **Therefore Jesus, knowing they were about to come and seize him to make him king, withdrew again into the mountain all alone. (John 6:15)**
- **While they were listening to these things he spoke in addition an illustration, because he was near Jerusalem and they were imagining that the kingdom of God was going to display itself instantly. (Luke 19:11)**
- **Therefore he said; A certain man of noble birth traveled to a distant land to secure kingly power for himself and to return. (Luke 19:12)**
- **When, now, they had assembled, they went asking him; Lord, are you restoring the kingdom to Israel at this time? (Acts of Apostles 1:6)**
- **He said to them; It does not belong to you to get knowledge of the times or seasons which the Father has placed in his own jurisdiction. (Acts of Apostles 1:7)**
- **But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit arrives upon you, and you will be witnesses of me both in Jerusalem and in all Judea and Samaria and to the most distant part of the earth. (Acts of Apostles 1:8)**
- **And after he had said these things, while they were looking on, he was lifted up and a cloud caught him up from their vision. (Acts of Apostles 1:9)**

- **He did not overstep the bounds of his authority.**
- **Then a certain one of the crowd said to him; Teacher, tell my brother to divide the inheritance with me. (Luke 12:13)**
- **He said to him; Man, who appointed me judge or apportioner over you persons? (Luke 12:14)**
- **No one could convict him of sin, this was not merely because he had been born perfect but because he exercised constant care to observe God's Word.**
- **Who of you convicts me of sin? If I speak truth, why is it you do not believe me? (John 8:46)**
- **And yet you have not known him. But I know him. And if I said I do not know him I should be like you, a liar. But I do know him and am observing his word. (John 8:55)**
- **Righteousness and faithfulness girded him like a belt.**
- **And righteousness must prove to be the belt of his hips, and faithfulness the belt of his loins. (Isaiah 11:5)**
- **His love of righteousness was coupled with a hatred of wickedness, hypocrisy, and fraud, as well as indignation toward those who were greedy and callous toward the sufferings of others.**
- **Not everyone saying to me; Lord, Lord. Will enter into the kingdom of the heavens, but the one doing the will of my Father who is in the heavens will. (Matthew 7:21)**
- **Many will say to me in that day; Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name, and expel demons in your name, and perform many powerful works in your name? (Matthew 7:22)**
- **And yet then I will confess to them; I never knew you! Get away from me, you workers of lawlessness. (Matthew 7:23)**
- **Therefore everyone that hears these sayings of mine and does them will be likened to a discreet man, who built his house upon the rock-mass. (Matthew 7:24)**

- **And the rain poured down and the floods came and the winds blew and lashed against that house, but it did not cave in, for it had been founded upon the rock-mass. (Matthew 7:25)**
- **Furthermore, everyone hearing these sayings of mine and not doing them will be likened to a foolish man, who built his house upon the sand. (Matthew 7:26)**
- **And the rain poured down and the floods came and the winds blew and struck against that house and it caved in, and its collapse was great. (Matthew 7:27)**
- **Then Jesus spoke to the crowds and to his disciples, saying; (Matthew 23:1)**
- **The scribes and the Pharisees have seated themselves in the seat of Moses. (Matthew 23:2)**
- **Therefore all the things they tell you, do and observe, but do not do according to their deeds, for they say but do not perform. (Matthew 23:3)**
- **They bind up heavy loads and put them upon the shoulders of men, but they themselves are not willing to budge them with their finger. (Matthew 23:4)**
- **All the works they do they do to be viewed by men, for they broaden the scripture-containing cases that they wear as safeguards, and enlarge the fringes of their garments. (Matthew 23:5)**
- **They like the most prominent place at evening meals and the front seats in the synagogues. (Matthew 23:6)**
- **And the greetings in the marketplaces and to be called Rabbi by men. (Matthew 23:7)**
- **But you, do not you be called Rabbi, for one is your teacher, whereas all you are brothers. (Matthew 23:8)**
- **Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! Because you cleanse the outside of the cup and of the dish, but inside they are full of plunder and immoderateness. (Matthew 23:25)**

- **Blind Pharisee, cleanse first the inside of the cup and of the dish, that the outside of it also may become clean. (Matthew 23:26)**
- **Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! Because you resemble whitewashed graves, which outwardly indeed appear beautiful but inside are full of dead men's bones and of every sort of uncleanness. (Matthew 23:27)**
- **In that way you also, outwardly indeed, appear righteous to men, but inside you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness. (Matthew 23:28)**
- **Once again he entered into a synagogue, and a man was there with a dried-up hand. (Mark 3:1)**
- **So they were watching him closely to see whether he would cure the man on the Sabbath, in order, that they might accuse him. (Mark 3:2)**
- **And he said to the man with the withered hand; Get up and come to the center. (Mark 3:3)**
- **Next he said to them; Is it lawful on the Sabbath to do a good deed or to do a bad deed, to save or to kill a soul? But they kept silent. (Mark 3:4)**
- **And after looking around upon them with indignation, being thoroughly grieved at the insensibility of their hearts, he said to the man; Stretch out your hand. And he stretched it out, and his hand was restored. (Mark 3:5)**
- **And in his teaching he went on to say; Look out for the scribes that want to walk around in robes and want greetings in the marketplaces (Mark 12:38)**
- **And front seats in the synagogues and most prominent places at evening meals. (Mark 12:39)**
- **They are the ones devouring the houses of the widows and for a pretext making long prayers, these will receive a heavier judgment. (Mark 12:40)**
- **And he sat down with the treasury chests in view and began observing how the crowd was dropping money into the treasury**

chests, and many rich people were dropping in many coins. (**Mark 12:41**)

- Now a poor widow came and dropped in two small coins, which have very little value. (**Mark 12:42**)
- So he called his disciples to him and said to them; Truly I say to you that this poor widow dropped in more than all those dropping money into the treasury chests. (**Mark 12:43**)
- For they all dropped in out of their surplus, but she, out of her want, dropped in all of what she had, her whole living. (**Mark 12:44**)
- Meek and lowly ones could take heart, because his rule would wipe out injustice and oppression.
- And with righteousness he must judge the lowly ones, and with uprightness he must give reproof in behalf of the meek ones of the earth. And he must strike the earth with the rod of his mouth, and with the spirit of his lips he will put the wicked one to death. (**Isaiah 11:4**)
- Happy are the mild-tempered ones, since they will inherit the earth. (**Matthew 5:5**)
- He showed keen discernment of principles, of the real meaning and purpose of God's Laws, emphasizing the weightier matters thereof, justice and mercy and faithfulness.
- At that season **Jesus** went through the grainfields on the Sabbath. His disciples got hungry and started to pluck heads of grain and to eat. (**Matthew 12:1**)
- At seeing this the Pharisees said to him; Look! Your disciples are doing what it is not lawful to do on the Sabbath. (**Matthew 12:2**)
- He said to them; Have you not read what David did when he and the men with him got hungry? (**Matthew 12:3**)
- How he entered into the house of God and they ate the loaves of presentation, something that it was not lawful for him to eat, nor for those with him, but for the priests only? (**Matthew 12:4**)

- Or, have you not read in the Law that on the Sabbaths the priests in the temple treat the Sabbath as not sacred and continue guiltless? (**Matthew 12:5**)
- But I tell you that something greater than the temple is here. (**Matthew 12:6**)
- However, if you had understood what this means, I want mercy, and not sacrifice, you would not have condemned the guiltless ones. (**Matthew 12:7**)
- For Lord of the Sabbath is what the Son of man is. (**Matthew 12:8**)
- Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! Because you give the tenth of the mint and the dill and the cumin, but you have disregarded the weightier matters of the Law, namely, justice and mercy and faithfulness. These things it was binding to do, yet not to disregard the other things. (**Matthew 23:23**)
- Blind guides, who strain out the gnat but gulp down the camel! (**Matthew 23:24**)
- He was impartial, displaying no favoritism, even though he felt particular affection for one of his disciples.
- In that hour the disciples came near to **Jesus** and said; Who really is greatest in the kingdom of the heavens? (**Matthew 18:1**)
- So, calling a young child to him, he set it in their midst (**Matthew 18:2**)
- And said; Truly I say to you, unless you turn around and become as young children, you will by no means enter into the kingdom of the heavens. (**Matthew 18:3**)
- Therefore, whoever will humble himself like this young child is the one that is the greatest in the kingdom of the heavens. (**Matthew 18:4**)
- And James and John, the two sons of Zebedee, stepped up to him and said to him; Teacher, we want you to do for us whatever it is we ask you for. (**Mark 10:35**)

- He said to them; What do you want me to do for you? (**Mark 10:36**)
- They said to him; Grant us to sit down, one at your right hand and one at your left, in your glory. (**Mark 10:37**)
- But **Jesus** said to them; You do not know what you are asking for. Are you able to drink the cup which I am drinking, or to be baptized with the baptism with which I am being baptized? (**Mark 10:38**)
- They said to him; We are able. At that **Jesus** said to them; The cup I am drinking you will drink, and with the baptism with which I am being baptized you will be baptized. (**Mark 10:39**)
- However, this sitting down at my right or at my left is not mine to give, but it belongs to those for whom it has been prepared. (**Mark 10:40**)
- Well, when the ten others heard about it, they started to be indignant at James and John. (**Mark 10:41**)
- But **Jesus**, after calling them to him, said to them; You know that those who appear to be ruling the nations lord it over them and their great ones wield authority over them. (**Mark 10:42**)
- This is not the way among you, but whoever wants to become great among you must be your minister. (**Mark 10:43**)
- And whoever wants to be first among you must be the slave of all. (**Mark 10:44**)
- There was reclining in front of **Jesus** bosom one of his disciples, and Jesus loved him. (**John 13:23**)
- Furthermore, if you are calling upon the Father who judges impartially according to each ones work, conduct yourselves with fear during the time of your alien residence. (**1 Peter 1:17**)
- Though one of his last acts while dying on the torture stake was to show concern for his human mother, his fleshly family ties never took priority over his spiritual relationships.
- While he was yet speaking to the crowds, look! His mother and

brothers took up a position outside seeking to speak to him.
([Matthew 12:46](#))

- So someone said to him; Look! Your mother and your brothers are standing outside, seeking to speak to you. ([Matthew 12:47](#))
- As an answer he said to the one telling him; Who is my mother, and who are my brothers? ([Matthew 12:48](#))
- And extending his hand toward his disciples, he said; Look! My mother and my brothers! ([Matthew 12:49](#))
- For whoever does the will of my Father who is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother. ([Matthew 12:50](#))
- Now as he was saying these things a certain woman out of the crowd raised her voice and said to him; Happy is the womb that carried you and the breasts that you sucked! ([Luke 11:27](#))
- But he said; No, rather, Happy are those hearing the word of God and keeping it! ([Luke 11:28](#))
- Therefore **Jesus**, seeing his mother and the disciple whom he loved standing by, said to his mother; Woman, see! Your son! ([John 19:26](#))
- Next he said to the disciple; See! Your mother! And from that hour on the disciple took her to his own home. ([John 19:27](#))
- As foretold, his handling of problems was never superficial, based on, any mere appearance to his eyes, nor was his reproof simply according to the thing heard by his ears.
- And there will be enjoyment by him in the fear of Yehowah. And he will not judge by any mere appearance to his eyes, nor reprove simply according to the thing heard by his ears. ([Isaiah 11:3](#))
- Stop judging from the outward appearance, but judge with righteous judgment. ([John 7:24](#))
- He was able to see into men's hearts, discern their thinking, reasoning, and motives.

- And **Jesus**, knowing their thoughts, said; Why are you thinking wicked things in your hearts? (**Matthew 9:4**)
- Now there were some of the scribes there, sitting and reasoning in their hearts. (**Mark 2:6**)
- Why is this man talking in this manner? He is blaspheming. Who can forgive sins except one, God? (**Mark 2:7**)
- But **Jesus**, having discerned immediately by his spirit that they were reasoning that way in themselves, said to them; Why are you reasoning these things in your hearts? (**Mark 2:8**)
- However, when he was in Jerusalem at the Passover, at its festival, many people put their faith in his name, viewing his signs that he was performing. (**John 2:23**)
- But **Jesus** himself was not entrusting himself to them because of his knowing them all (**John 2:24**)
- And because he was in no need to have anyone bear witness about man, for he himself knew what was in man. (**John 2:25**)
- And he kept his ear tuned to God's Word and sought, not his own will, but that of his Father, this assured that, as God's appointed Judge, his decisions would always be right and righteous.
- And with righteousness he must judge the lowly ones, and with uprightness he must give reproof in behalf of the meek ones of the earth. And he must strike the earth with the rod of his mouth, and with the spirit of his lips he will put the wicked one to death. (**Isaiah 11:4**)
- I cannot do a single thing of my own initiative, just as I hear, I judge. The judgment that I render is righteous, because I seek, not my own will, but the will of him that sent me. (**John 5:30**)

·· Outstanding Prophet

- **Jesus** fulfilled the requirements of a prophet like, but greater than, Moses.
- A prophet from your own midst, from your brothers, like me, is what Yehowah your God will raise up for you, to him you people

- should listen. (**Deuteronomy 18:15**)
- A prophet I shall raise up for them from the midst of their brothers, like you, and I shall indeed put my words in his mouth, and he will certainly speak to them all that I shall command him. (**Deuteronomy 18:18**)
 - And it must occur that the man who will not listen to my words that he will speak in my name, I shall myself require an account from him. (**Deuteronomy 18:19**)
 - The crowds kept telling; This is the prophet **Jesus**, from Nazareth of Galilee! (**Matthew 21:11**)
 - And he said to them; What things? They said to him; The things concerning **Jesus** the Nazarene, who became a prophet powerful in work and word before God and all the people. (**Luke 24:19**)
 - Repent, therefore, and turn around so as to get your sins blotted out, that seasons of refreshing may come from the person of Yehowah. (**Acts of Apostles 3:19**)
 - And that he may send forth the Christ appointed for you, **Jesus**. (**Acts of Apostles 3:20**)
 - Whom heaven, indeed, must hold within itself until the times of restoration of all things of which God spoke through the mouth of his holy prophets of old time. (**Acts of Apostles 3:21**)
 - In fact, Moses said; Yehowah God will raise up for you from among your brothers a prophet like me. You must listen to him according to all the things he speaks to you. (**Acts of Apostles 3:22**)
 - Indeed, any soul that does not listen to that Prophet will be completely destroyed from among the people. (**Acts of Apostles 3:23**)
 - Therefore some of the crowd that heard these words began saying; This is for a certainty The Prophet. (**John 7:40**)
 - He foretold his own sufferings and manner of death, the scattering of his disciples, the siege of Jerusalem, and the utter destruction of that city and its temple.

- Being now about to go up to Jerusalem, **Jesus** took the twelve disciples off privately and said to them on the road. (**Matthew 20:17**)
- Look! We are going up to Jerusalem, and the Son of man will be delivered up to the chief priests and scribes, and they will condemn him to death. (**Matthew 20:18**)
- And will deliver him up to men of the nations to make fun of and to scourge and to impale, and the third day he will be raised up. (**Matthew 20:19**)
- Departing now, **Jesus** was on his way from the temple, but his disciples approached to show him the buildings of the temple. (**Matthew 24:1**)
- And these will depart into everlasting cutting-off, but the righteous ones into everlasting life. (**Matthew 25:46**)
- Then **Jesus** said to them; All of you will be stumbled in connection with me on this night, for it is written: I will strike the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock will be scattered about. (**Matthew 26:31**)
- But after I have been raised up, I will go ahead of you into Galilee. (**Matthew 26:32**)
- But Peter, in answer, said to him; Although all the others are stumbled in connection with you, never will I be stumbled! (**Matthew 26:33**)
- **Jesus** said to him; Truly I say to you, on this night, before a cock crows, you will disown me three times. (**Matthew 26:34**)
- And when he got nearby, he viewed the city and wept over it. (**Luke 19:41**)
- Saying; If you, even you, had discerned in this day the things having to do with peace, but now they have been hid from your eyes. (**Luke 19:42**)
- Because the days will come upon you when your enemies will build around you a fortification with pointed stakes and will

- encircle you and distress you from every side. (**Luke 19:43**)
- **And they will dash you and your children within you to the ground, and they will not leave a stone upon a stone in you, because you did not discern the time of your being inspected. (**Luke 19:44**)**
 - **Furthermore, when you see Jerusalem surrounded by encamped armies, then know that the desolating of her has drawn near. (**Luke 21:20**)**
 - **Then let those in Judea begin fleeing to the mountains, and let those in the midst of her withdraw, and let those in the country places not enter into her. (**Luke 21:21**)**
 - **Because these are days for meting out justice, that all the things written may be fulfilled. (**Luke 21:22**)**
 - **Woe to the pregnant women and the ones suckling a baby in those days! For there will be great necessity upon the land and wrath on this people. (**Luke 21:23**)**
 - **And they will fall by the edge of the sword and be led captive into all the nations, and Jerusalem will be trampled on by the nations, until the appointed times of the nations are fulfilled. (**Luke 21:24**)**
 - **I am not talking about all of you. I know the ones I have chosen. But it is in order, that the Scripture might be fulfilled, He that used to feed on my bread has lifted up his heel against me. (**John 13:18**)**
 - **From this moment on I am telling you before it occurs, in order, that when it does occur you may believe that I am he. (**John 13:19**)**
 - **Most truly I say to you, he that receives anyone I send receives me also. In turn he that receives me, receives also him that sent me. (**John 13:20**)**
 - **After saying these things, **Jesus** became troubled in spirit, and he bore witness and said; Most truly I say to you, one of you will betray me. (**John 13:21**)**

- The disciples began to look at one another, being at a loss as to which one he was saying it about. (**John 13:22**)
- There was reclining in front of **Jesus** bosom one of his disciples, and Jesus loved him. (**John 13:23**)
- Therefore Simon Peter nodded to this one and said to him; Tell who it is about whom he is saying it. (**John 13:24**)
- So the latter leaned back upon the breast of **Jesus** and said to him; Lord, who is it? (**John 13:25**)
- Therefore **Jesus** answered; It is that one to whom I shall give the morsel that I dip. And so, having dipped the morsel, he took and gave it to Judas, the son of Simon Iscariot. (**John 13:26**)
- And after the morsel then Satan entered into the latter. **Jesus**, therefore, said to him; What you are doing get done more quickly. (**John 13:27**)
- **Jesus** answered; Will you surrender your soul in my behalf? Most truly I say to you, A cock will by no means crow until you have disowned me three times. (**John 13:38**)
- In connection with these latter events, he included prophecies to be fulfilled at the time of his presence, when his Kingdom would be in active operation.
- And, like the earlier prophets, he performed signs and miracles as evidence from God that he was divinely sent. His credentials surpassed those of Moses he calmed the stormy sea of Galilee, walked on its waters.
- And when he got aboard a boat, his disciples followed him. (**Matthew 8:23**)
- Now, look! A great agitation arose in the sea, so that the boat was being covered by the waves, he, however, was sleeping. (**Matthew 8:24**)
- And they came and woke him up, saying; Lord, save us, we are about to perish! (**Matthew 8:25**)
- But he said to them; Why are you fainthearted, you with little

- faith? Then, getting up, he rebuked the winds and the sea, and a great calm set in. (**Matthew 8:26**)
- So the men became amazed and said; What sort of person is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him? (**Matthew 8:27**)
 - Eventually, having sent the crowds away, he went up into the mountain by himself to pray. Though it became late, he was there alone. (**Matthew 14:23**)
 - By now the boat was many hundreds of yards away from land, being hard put to it by the waves, because the wind was against them. (**Matthew 14:24**)
 - But in the fourth watch period of the night he came to them, walking over the sea. (**Matthew 14:25**)
 - When they caught sight of him walking on the sea, the disciples were troubled, saying; It is an apparition! And they cried out in their fear. (**Matthew 14:26**)
 - But at once **Jesus** spoke to them with the words; Take courage, it is I. Have no fear. (**Matthew 14:27**)
 - In reply Peter said to him; Lord, if it is you, command me to come to you over the waters. (**Matthew 14:28**)
 - He said; Come! Thereupon Peter, getting down off the boat, walked over the waters and went toward **Jesus**. (**Matthew 14:29**)
 - But looking at the windstorm, he got afraid and, after starting to sink, he cried out; Lord, save me! (**Matthew 14:30**)
 - Immediately stretching out his hand **Jesus** caught hold of him and said to him; You with little faith, why did you give way to doubt? (**Matthew 14:31**)
 - And after they got up into the boat, the windstorm abated. (**Matthew 14:32**)
 - Then those in the boat did obeisance to him, saying; You are really God's Son. (**Matthew 14:33**)
 - And they got across and came to land in Gennesaret. (**Matthew**

14:34)

- **Healed the blind, the deaf, and the lame, as well as those with sicknesses as grave as leprosy, and even raised the dead.**
- **Now John's disciples reported to him about all these things. (Luke 7:18)**
- **So John summoned a certain two of his disciples and sent them to the Lord to say; Are you the Coming One or are we to expect a different one? (Luke 7:19)**
- **When they came up to him the men said; John the Baptist dispatched us to you to say; Are you the Coming One or are we to expect another? (Luke 7:20)**
- **In that hour he cured many of sicknesses and grievous diseases and wicked spirits, and granted many blind persons the favor of seeing. (Luke 7:21)**
- **Hence in answer he said to the two; Go your way, report to John what you saw and heard, the blind are receiving sight, the lame are walking, the lepers are being cleansed and the deaf are hearing, the dead are being raised up, the poor are being told the Good News. (Luke 7:22)**
- **And happy is he who has not stumbled over me. (Luke 7:23)**
- **But, look! A man named Jairus came, and this man was a presiding officer of the synagogue. And he fell at the feet of Jesus and began to entreat him to enter into his house. (Luke 8:41)**
- **Because he had an only-begotten daughter about twelve years old and she was dying. As he was going the crowds thronged him. (Luke 8:42)**
- **And a woman, subject to a flow of blood for twelve years, who had not been able to get a cure from anyone. (Luke 8:43)**
- **Approached from behind and touched the fringe of his outer garment, and instantly her flow of blood stopped. (Luke 8:44)**
- **So Jesus said; Who was it that touched me? When they were all**

- denying it, Peter said; Instructor, the crowds are hemming you in and closely pressing you. (**Luke 8:45**)
- Yet **Jesus** said; Someone touched me, for I perceived that power went out of me. (**Luke 8:46**)
 - Seeing that she had not escaped notice, the woman came trembling and fell down before him and disclosed before all the people the cause for which she touched him and how she was healed instantly. (**Luke 8:47**)
 - But he said to her; Daughter, your faith has made you well, go your way in peace. (**Luke 8:48**)
 - While he was yet speaking, a certain representative of the presiding officer of the synagogue came, saying; Your daughter has died, do not bother the teacher any longer. (**Luke 8:49**)
 - On hearing this, **Jesus** answered him; Have no fear, only put forth faith, and she will be saved. (**Luke 8:50**)
 - When he reached the house he did not let anyone go in with him except Peter and John and James and the girl's father and mother. (**Luke 8:51**)
 - But people were all weeping and beating themselves in grief for her. So he said; Stop weeping, for she did not die but is sleeping. (**Luke 8:52**)
 - At this they began to laugh at him scornfully, because they knew she had died. (**Luke 8:53**)
 - But he took her by the hand and called, saying; Girl, get up! (**Luke 8:54**)
 - And her spirit returned, and she rose instantly, and he ordered something to be given her to eat. (**Luke 8:55**)
 - Well, her parents were beside themselves, but he instructed them to tell no one what had happened. (**Luke 8:56**)
 - Now there was a certain man sick, Lazarus of Bethany, of the village of Mary and of Martha her sister. (**John 11:1**)

- It was, in fact, the Mary that greased the Lord with perfumed oil and wiped his feet dry with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick. ([John 11:2](#))
- Therefore his sisters dispatched word to him, saying; Lord, see! the one for whom you have affection is sick. ([John 11:3](#))
- But when **Jesus** heard it he said; This sickness is not with death as its object, but is for the glory of God, in order, that the Son of God may be glorified through it. ([John 11:4](#))
- Now **Jesus** loved Martha and her sister and Lazarus. ([John 11:5](#))
- However, when he heard that he was sick, then he actually remained two days in the place where he was. ([John 11:6](#))
- Then after this he said to the disciples; Let us go into Judea again. ([John 11:7](#))
- The disciples said to him; Rabbi, just lately the Judeans were seeking to stone you, and are you going there again? ([John 11:8](#))
- **Jesus** answered; There are twelve hours of daylight, are there not? If anyone walks in daylight he does not bump against anything, because he sees the light of this world. ([John 11:9](#))
- But if anyone walks in the night, he bumps against something, because the light is not in him. ([John 11:10](#))
- He said these things, and after this he said to them; Lazarus our friend has gone to rest, but I am journeying there to awaken him from sleep. ([John 11:11](#))
- Therefore the disciples said to him; Lord, if he has gone to rest, he will get well. ([John 11:12](#))
- **Jesus** had spoken, however, about his death. But they imagined he was speaking about taking rest in sleep. ([John 11:13](#))
- At that time, therefore, **Jesus** said to them outspokenly; Lazarus has died. ([John 11:14](#))
- And I rejoice on your account that I was not there, in order for you to believe. But let us go to him. ([John 11:15](#))

- Therefore Thomas, who was called The Twin, said to his fellow disciples; Let us also go, that we may die with him. (**John 11:16**)
- Consequently when **Jesus** arrived, he found he had already been four days in the memorial tomb. (**John 11:17**)
- Now Bethany was near Jerusalem at a distance of about two miles. (**John 11:18**)
- Accordingly many of the Jews had come to Martha and Mary in order to console them concerning their brother. (**John 11:19**)
- Therefore Martha, when she heard that **Jesus** was coming, met him, but Mary kept sitting at home. (**John 11:20**)
- Martha therefore said to **Jesus**; Lord, if you had been here my brother would not have died. (**John 11:21**)
- And yet at present I know that as many things as you ask God for, God will give you. (**John 11:22**)
- **Jesus** said to her; Your brother will rise. (**John 11:23**)
- Martha said to him; I know he will rise in the resurrection on the last day. (**John 11:24**)
- **Jesus** said to her; I am the resurrection and the life. He that exercises faith in me, even though he dies, will come to life. (**John 11:25**)
- And everyone that is living and exercises faith in me will never die at all. Do you believe this? (**John 11:26**)
- She said to him; Yes, Lord, I have believed that you are the Christ the Son of God, the One coming into the world. (**John 11:27**)
- And when she had said this, she went off and called Mary her sister, saying secretly; The Teacher is present and is calling you. (**John 11:28**)
- The latter, when she heard this, got up quickly and was on her way to him. (**John 11:29**)

- **Jesus** had not yet, in fact, come into the village, but he was still in the place where Martha met him. (**John 11:30**)
- Therefore the Jews that were with her in the house and that were consoling her, on seeing Mary rise quickly and go out, followed her, supposing that she was going to the memorial tomb to weep there. (**John 11:31**)
- And so Mary, when she arrived where **Jesus** was and caught sight of him, fell at his feet, saying to him; Lord, if you had been here, my brother would not have died. (**John 11:32**)
- **Jesus**, therefore, when he saw her weeping and the Jews that came with her weeping, groaned in the spirit and became troubled. (**John 11:33**)
- And he said; Where have you laid him? They said to him, Lord, come and see. (**John 11:34**)
- **Jesus** gave way to tears. (**John 11:35**)
- Therefore the Jews began to say; See, what affection he used to have for him! (**John 11:36**)
- But some of them said; Was not this man that opened the eyes of the blind man able to prevent this one from dying? (**John 11:37**)
- Hence **Jesus**, after groaning again within himself, came to the memorial tomb. It was, in fact, a cave, and a stone was lying against it. (**John 11:38**)
- **Jesus** said; Take the stone away. Martha, the sister of the deceased, said to him; Lord, by now he must smell, for it is four days. (**John 11:39**)
- **Jesus** said to her; Did I not tell you that if you would believe you would see the glory of God? (**John 11:40**)
- Therefore they took the stone away. Now **Jesus** raised his eyes heavenward and said; Father, I thank you that you have heard me. (**John 11:41**)

- True, I knew that you always hear me, but on account of the crowd standing around I spoke, in order, that they might believe that you sent me forth. (**John 11:42**)
- And when he had said these things, he cried out with a loud voice; Lazarus, come on out! (**John 11:43**)
- The man that had been dead came out with his feet and hands bound with wrappings, and his countenance was bound about with a cloth. **Jesus** said to them; Loose him and let him go. (**John 11:44**)
- Therefore many of the Jews that had come to Mary and that beheld what he did put faith in him. (**John 11:45**)
- But some of them went off to the Pharisees and told them the things **Jesus** did. (**John 11:46**)

·· **Superb Example Of Love**

- The quality that predominates through all these aspects of **Jesus** personality is love **Jesus** love for his Father above all and also for his fellow creatures.
- He said to him; You must love Yehowah your God with your whole heart and with your whole soul and with your whole mind. (**Matthew 22:37**)
- This is the greatest and first commandment. (**Matthew 22:38**)
- The second, like it, is this: You must love your neighbor as yourself. (**Matthew 22:39**)
- Love was therefore to be the distinguishing mark identifying his disciples.
- I am giving you a new commandment, that you love one another, just as I have loved you, that you also love one another. (**John 13:34**)
- By this all will know that you are my disciples, if you have love among yourselves. (**John 13:35**)
- We know we have passed over from death to life, because we

love the brothers. He who does not love remains in death. (**1 John 3:14**)

- **His love was not sentimentality. Though he expressed strong feeling, Jesus was always guided by principle.**
- **You loved righteousness, and you hated lawlessness. That is why God, your God, anointed you with the oil of exultation more than your partners. (**Hebrews 1:9**)**
- **His Father's will was his supreme concern.**
- **From that time forward **Jesus Christ** commenced showing his disciples that he must go to Jerusalem and suffer many things from the older men and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and on the third day be raised up. (**Matthew 16:21**)**
- **At this Peter took him aside and commenced rebuking him, saying; Be kind to yourself, Lord; You will not have this destiny at all. (**Matthew 16:22**)**
- **But, turning his back, he said to Peter; Get behind me, Satan! You are a stumbling block to me, because you think, not God's thoughts, but those of men. (**Matthew 16:23**)**
- **He proved his love for God by keeping God's commandments.**
- **I shall not speak much with you anymore, for the ruler of the world is coming. And he has no hold on me. (**John 14:30**)**
- **But, in order for the world to know that I love the Father, even as the Father has given me commandment to do, so I am doing. Get up, let us go from here. (**John 14:31**)**
- **For this is what the love of God means, that we observe his commandments, and yet his commandments are not burdensome. (**1 John 5:3**)**
- **And by seeking to glorify his Father at all times.**
- ****Jesus** spoke these things, and, raising his eyes to heaven, he said; Father, the hour has come, glorify your son, that your son may glorify you. (**John 17:1**)**

- According as you have given him authority over all flesh, that, as regards the whole number whom you have given him, he may give them everlasting life. (**John 17:2**)
- This means everlasting life, their taking in knowledge of you, the only true God, and of the one whom you sent forth, **Jesus** Christ. (**John 17:3**)
- I have glorified you on the earth, having finished the work you have given me to do. (**John 17:4**)
- On his final night with his disciples, he spoke of love and loving nearly thirty times, three times repeating the command that they love one another.
- I am giving you a new commandment, that you love one another, just as I have loved you, that you also love one another. (**John 13:34**)
- This is my commandment, that you love one another just as I have loved you. (**John 15:12**)
- These things I command you, that you love one another. (**John 15:17**)
- He told them;
- No one has love greater than this, that someone should surrender his soul in behalf of his friends. (**John 15:13**)
- You are my friends if you do what I am commanding you. (**John 15:14**)
- I am the fine shepherd, the fine shepherd surrenders his soul in behalf of the sheep. (**John 10:11**)
- The hired man, who is no shepherd and to whom the sheep do not belong as his own, beholds the wolf coming and abandons the sheep and flees, and the wolf snatches them and scatters them. (**John 10:12**)
- Because he is a hired man and does not care for the sheep. (**John 10:13**)

- I am the fine shepherd, and I know my sheep and my sheep know me. ([John 10:14](#))
- Just as the Father knows me and I know the Father, and I surrender my soul in behalf of the sheep. ([John 10:15](#))
- In proof of his love for God and for imperfect mankind, he then let himself be, brought just like a sheep to the slaughtering, submitting to trials, being slapped, hit with fists, spit on, scourged with a whip, and finally, nailed to a stake between criminals.
- He was hard pressed, and he was letting himself be afflicted, yet he would not open his mouth. He was being brought just like a sheep to the slaughtering. Like a ewe that before her shearers has become mute, he also would not open his mouth. ([Isaiah 53:7](#))
- Then they spit into his face and hit him with their fists. Others slapped him in the face. ([Matthew 26:67](#))
- Saying; Prophecy to us, you Christ. Who is it that struck you? ([Matthew 26:68](#))
- Then he released Barabbas to them, but he had **Jesus** whipped and handed him over to be impaled. ([Matthew 27:26](#))
- Then the soldiers of the governor took **Jesus** into the governor's palace and gathered the whole body of troops together to him. ([Matthew 27:27](#))
- And disrobing him, they draped him with a scarlet cloak. ([Matthew 27:28](#))
- And they braided a crown out of thorns and put it on his head and a reed in his right hand. And, kneeling before him, they made fun of him, saying; Good day, you King of the Jews! ([Matthew 27:29](#))
- And they spit upon him and took the reed and began hitting him upon his head. ([Matthew 27:30](#))
- Finally, when they had made fun of him, they took the cloak off and put his outer garments upon him and led him off for impaling. ([Matthew 27:31](#))

- **As they were going out they found a native of Cyrene named Simon. This man they impressed into service to lift up his torture stake. (Matthew 27:32)**
- **And when they came to a place called Golgotha, that is to say; Skull Place. (Matthew 27:33)**
- **They gave him wine mixed with gall to drink, but, after tasting it, he refused to drink. (Matthew 27:34)**
- **When they had impaled him they distributed his outer garments by casting lots. (Matthew 27:35)**
- **And, as they sat, they watched over him there. (Matthew 27:36)**
- **Also, they posted above his head the charge against him, in writing. This is Jesus the King of the Jews. (Matthew 27:37)**
- **Then two robbers were impaled with him, one on his right and one on his left. (Matthew 27:38)**
- **And some started to spit on him and to cover his whole face and hit him with their fists and say to him; Prophecy! And, slapping him in the face, the court attendants took him. (Mark 14:65)**
- **At that Pilate, wishing to satisfy the crowd, released Barabbas to them, and, after having Jesus whipped, he handed him over to be impaled. (Mark 15:15)**
- **The soldiers now led him off into the courtyard, that is, into the governor's palace, and they called the whole body of troops together. (Mark 15:16)**
- **And they decked him with purple and braided a crown of thorns and put it on him. (Mark 15:17)**
- **And they started greeting him; Good day, you King of the Jews! (Mark 15:18)**
- **Also, they would hit him on the head with a reed and spit upon him and, bending their knees, they would do obeisance to him. (Mark 15:19)**

- Finally, when they had made fun of him, they stripped him of the purple and put his outer garments upon him. And they led him out to impale him. (**Mark 15:20**)
- At that time, therefore, Pilate took **Jesus** and scourged him. (**John 19:1**)
- **By his sacrificial death he exemplified and expressed God's love toward men.**
- But God recommends his own love to us in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. (**Romans 5:8**)
- Much more, therefore, since we have been declared righteous now by his blood, shall we be saved through him from wrath. (**Romans 5:9**)
- For if, when we were enemies, we became reconciled to God through the death of his Son, much more, now that we have become reconciled, we shall be saved by his life. (**Romans 5:10**)
- But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love with which he loved us. (**Ephesians 2:4**)
- Made us alive together with the Christ, even when we were dead in trespasses, by undeserved kindness you have been saved. (**Ephesians 2:5**)
- **And enabled men to have absolute belief in his own unbreakable love for his faithful disciples.**
- Who will separate us from the love of the Christ? Will tribulation or distress or persecution or hunger or nakedness or danger or sword? (**Romans 8:35**)
- Just as it is written: For your sake we are being put to death all day long, we have been accounted as sheep for slaughtering. (**Romans 8:36**)
- To the contrary, in all these things we are coming off completely victorious through him that loved us. (**Romans 8:37**)
- For I am convinced that neither death nor life nor angels nor governments nor things now here nor things to come nor powers

(Romans 8:38)

- Nor height nor depth nor any other creation will be able to separate us from God's love that is in Christ **Jesus** our Lord. **(Romans 8:39)**
- By this we have come to know love, because that one surrendered his soul for us, and we are under obligation to surrender our souls for our brothers. **(1 John 3:16)**
- But whoever has this world's means for supporting life and beholds his brother having need and yet shuts the door of his tender compassions upon him, in what way does the love of God remain in him? **(1 John 3:17)**
- Little children, let us love, neither in word nor with the tongue, but in deed and truth. **(1 John 3:18)**
- Since the portrait of God's Son obtainable through the written record, admittedly brief.
- There are, in fact, many other things also which **Jesus** did, which, if ever they were written in full detail, I suppose, the world itself could not contain the scrolls written. **(John 21:25)**
- Is grand, the reality must have been far grander. His heartwarming example of humility and kindness, coupled with strength for righteousness and justice, gives assurance that his Kingdom government will be all that men of faith through the centuries have longed for, in fact, that it will surpass their highest expectations.
- Consequently I reckon that the sufferings of the present season do not amount to anything in comparison with the glory that is going to be revealed in us. **(Romans 8:18)**
- For the eager expectation of the creation is waiting for the revealing of the sons of God. **(Romans 8:19)**
- For the creation was subjected to futility, not by its own will but through him that subjected it, on the basis of hope **(Romans 8:20)**
- That the creation itself also will be set free from enslavement to corruption and have the glorious freedom of the children of God.

(Romans 8:21)

- For we know that all creation keeps on groaning together and being in pain together until now. **(Romans 8:22)**
- **In all respects he exemplified the perfect standard for his disciples, one far different from that of worldly rulers.**
- But **Jesus**, calling them to him, said; You know that the rulers of the nations lord it over them and the great men wield authority over them. **(Matthew 20:25)**
- This is not the way among you, but whoever wants to become great among you must be your minister. **(Matthew 20:26)**
- And whoever wants to be first among you must be your slave. **(Matthew 20:27)**
- Just as the Son of man came, not to be ministered to, but to minister and to give his soul a ransom in exchange for many. **(Matthew 20:28)**
- Become imitators of me, even as I am of Christ. **(1 Corinthians 11:1)**
- In fact, to this course you were called, because even Christ suffered for you, leaving you a model for you to follow his steps closely. **(1 Peter 2:21)**
- **He, their Lord, washed their feet. Thus, he set the pattern of thoughtfulness, consideration, and humility that would characterize his congregation of anointed followers, not only on earth but also in heaven.**
- He, knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands and that he came forth from God and was going to God. **(John 13:3)**
- Got up from the evening meal and laid aside his outer garments. And, taking a towel, he girded himself. **(John 13:4)**
- After that he put water into a basin and started to wash the feet of the disciples and to dry them off with the towel with which he was girded. **(John 13:5)**

- And so he came to Simon Peter. He said to him; Lord, are you washing my feet? (**John 13:6**)
- In answer **Jesus** said to him; What I am doing you do not understand at present, but you will understand after these things. (**John 13:7**)
- Peter said to him; You will certainly never wash my feet. **Jesus** answered him; Unless I wash you, you have no part with me. (**John 13:8**)
- Simon Peter said to him; Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head. (**John 13:9**)
- **Jesus** said to him; He that has bathed does not need to have more than his feet washed, but is wholly clean. And you men are clean, but not all. (**John 13:10**)
- He knew, indeed, the man betraying him. This is why he said; Not all of you are clean. (**John 13:11**)
- When, now, he had washed their feet and had put his outer garments on and laid himself down at the table again, he said to them; Do you know what I have done to you? (**John 13:12**)
- You address me, Teacher, and, Lord, and you speak rightly, for I am such. (**John 13:13**)
- Therefore, if I, although Lord and Teacher, washed your feet, you also ought to wash the feet of one another. (**John 13:14**)
- For I set the pattern for you, that, just as I did to you, you should do also. (**John 13:15**)
- Though heaven-high on their thrones and sharing all authority in heaven and earth with **Jesus** during **Christ's** Thousand Year Reign, they must humbly care for and lovingly serve the needs of his subjects on earth.
- And **Jesus** approached and spoke to them, saying; All authority has been given me in heaven and on the earth. (**Matthew 28:18**)
- If, then, we are children, we are also heirs. Heirs indeed of God,

but joint heirs with Christ, provided we suffer together that we may also be glorified together. (**Romans 8:17**)

- But you are, a chosen race, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a people for special possession, that you should declare abroad the excellencies, of the one that called you out of darkness into his wonderful light. (**1 Peter 2:9**)
- And from **Jesus** Christ, the Faithful Witness, The Firstborn from the dead, and The Ruler of the kings of the earth. To him that loves us and that loosed us from our sins by means of his own blood. (**Revelation 1:5**)
- And he made us to be a kingdom, priests to his God and Father, yes, to him be the glory and the might forever. Amen. (**Revelation 1:6**)
- Happy and holy is anyone having part in the first resurrection, over these the second death has no authority, but they will be priests of God and of the Christ, and will rule as kings with him for the thousand years. (**Revelation 20:6**)
- I saw also the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God and prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. (**Revelation 21:2**)
- With that I heard a loud voice from the throne say; Look! The tent of God is with mankind, and he will reside with them, and they will be his peoples. And God himself will be with them. (**Revelation 21:3**)
- And he will wipe out every tear from their eyes, and death will be no more, neither will mourning nor outcry nor pain be anymore. The former things have passed away. (**Revelation 21:4**)

•• Declared Righteous And Worthy

- By his entire life course of integrity to God, including his sacrifice, **Jesus** Christ accomplished the one act of justification that proved him qualified to serve as God's anointed King-Priest in heaven.
- For if by the trespass of the one man death ruled as king through that one, much more will those who receive the abundance of the undeserved kindness and of the free gift of righteousness rule as

kings in life through the one person, **Jesus** Christ. (**Romans 5:17**)

- **So, then, as through one trespass the result to men of all sorts was condemnation, likewise also through one act of justification the result to men of all sorts is a declaring of them righteous for life. (**Romans 5:18**)**
- **By his resurrection from the dead to life as a heavenly Son of God, he was declared righteous in spirit.**
- **Indeed, the sacred secret of this godly devotion is admittedly great; He was made manifest in flesh, was declared righteous in spirit, appeared to angels, was preached about among nations, was believed upon in the world, was received up in glory. (**1 Timothy 3:16**)**
- **Heavenly creatures proclaimed him worthy to receive the power and riches and wisdom and strength and honor and glory and blessing, as one who was both lion-like in behalf of justice and judgment and also lamblike in giving himself as a sacrifice for the saving of others.**
- **But one of the elders says to me; Stop weeping. Look! The Lion that is of the tribe of Judah, the root of David, has conquered so as to open the scroll and its seven seals. (**Revelation 5:5**)**
- **And I saw standing in the midst of the throne and of the four living creatures and in the midst of the elders a lamb as though it had been slaughtered, having seven horns and seven eyes, which eyes mean the seven spirits of God that have been sent forth into the whole earth. (**Revelation 5:6**)**
- **And he went and at once took it out of the right hand of the One seated on the throne. (**Revelation 5:7**)**
- **And when he took the scroll, the four living creatures and the twenty-four elders fell down before the Lamb, having each one a harp and golden bowls that were full of incense, and the incense means the prayers of the holy ones. (**Revelation 5:8**)**
- **And they sing a new song, saying; You are worthy to take the scroll and open its seals, because you were slaughtered and with your blood you bought persons for God out of every tribe and tongue and people and nation. (**Revelation 5:9**)**

- **And you made them to be a kingdom and priests to our God, and they are to rule as kings over the earth. (Revelation 5:10)**
- **And I saw, and I heard a voice of many angels around the throne and the living creatures and the elders, and the number of them was myriads of myriads and thousands of thousands. (Revelation 5:11)**
- **Saying with a loud voice; The Lamb that was slaughtered is worthy to receive the power and riches and wisdom and strength and honor and glory and blessing. (Revelation 5:12)**
- **And every creature that is in heaven and on earth and underneath the earth and on the sea, and all the things in them, I heard saying; To the One sitting on the throne and to the Lamb be the blessing and the honor and the glory and the might forever and ever. (Revelation 5:13)**
- **He had accomplished his primary purpose of sanctifying his Father's name.**
- **You must pray, then, this way; Our Father in the heavens, let your name be sanctified. (Matthew 6:9)**
- **Teacher, which is the greatest commandment in the Law? (Matthew 22:36)**
- **He said to him; You must love Yehowah your God with your whole heart and with your whole soul and with your whole mind. (Matthew 22:37)**
- **This is the greatest and first commandment. (Matthew 22:38)**
- **This he did, not just by using that name, but by revealing the Person it represents, displaying his Father's splendid qualities his love, wisdom, justice, and power enabling persons to know or experience what God's name stands for.**
- **All things have been delivered to me by my Father, and no one fully knows the Son but the Father, neither does anyone fully know the Father but the Son and anyone to whom the Son is willing to reveal him. (Matthew 11:27)**
- **So the Word became flesh and resided among us, and we had a**

- view of his glory, a glory such as belongs to an only-begotten son from a father, and he was full of undeserved kindness and truth. (John 1:14)**
- **No man has seen God at any time, the only-begotten god who is in the bosom position with the Father is the one that has explained him. (John 1:18)**
 - **I have made your name manifest to the men you gave me out of the world. They were yours, and you gave them to me, and they have observed your word. (John 17:6)**
 - **They have now come to know that all the things you gave me are from you. (John 17:7)**
 - **Because the sayings that you gave me I have given to them, and they have received them and have certainly come to know that I came out as your representative, and they have believed that you sent me forth. (John 17:8)**
 - **I make request concerning them. I make request, not concerning the world, but concerning those you have given me, because they are yours. (John 17:9)**
 - **And all my things are yours and yours are mine, and I have been glorified among them. (John 17:10)**
 - **Also, I am no longer in the world, but they are in the world and I am coming to you. Holy Father, watch over them on account of your own name which you have given me, in order, that they may be one just as we are. (John 17:11)**
 - **When I was with them I used to watch over them on account of your own name which you have given me, and I have kept them, and not one of them is destroyed except the son of destruction, in order, that the scripture might be fulfilled. (John 17:12)**
 - **And above all, he did it by upholding Yehowah's universal sovereignty, showing that his own Kingdom government would be based solidly on that Supreme Source of authority. Therefore it could be said of him; God is your throne forever.**
 - **But with reference to the Son: God is your throne forever and ever, and the scepter of your kingdom is the scepter of**

uprightness. ([Hebrews 1:8](#))

- The Lord **Jesus Christ** is thus the Chief Agent and Perfecter of our faith. By his fulfillment of prophecy and his revelation of God's future purposes, as well as by what he said and did and was, he provided the solid foundation on which true faith must rest.
- As we look intently at the Chief Agent and Perfecter of our faith, **Jesus**. For the joy that was set before him he endured a torture stake, despising shame, and has sat down at the right hand of the throne of God. ([Hebrews 12:2](#))
- Faith is the assured expectation of things hoped for, the evident demonstration of realities though not beheld. ([Hebrews 11:1](#))